



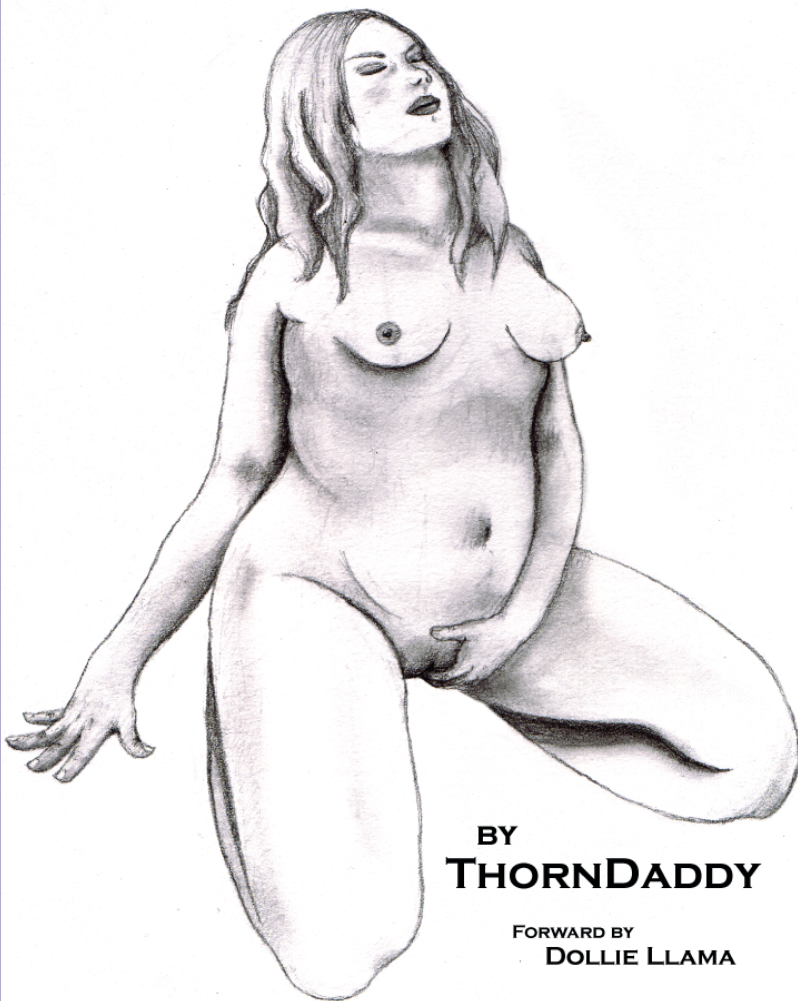
HOW TO FUCK A WOMAN'S BRAINS OUT

THORNDADDY

PEEP!
Press

HOW TO FUCK

A WOMAN'S BRAINS OUT



BY
THORNDADDY

FORWARD BY
DOLLIE LLAMA



HOW TO FUCK A WOMAN'S BRAINS OUT

By **ThornDaddy**

Forward by **Dollie Llama**

ThornDaddy from the "Submission and Coffee" podcast teaches you how to pet her pretties, part her petals, and nail her to the center of the earth with your cock until she squirts stars and secrets onto the majesty of your bed.

HOW TO FUCK A WOMAN'S BRAINS OUT is **not** a guide on how to "find em' feel em' fuck em' and forget 'em." It's **not** a manual on how to "bag weak women with pickup lines and mind tricks."

HOW TO FUCK A WOMAN'S BRAINS OUT is a stunning BDSM resource and manifesto on finding the perfect willing sex slave (or two), keeping her in your life, and loving the hell out of her — mind, body and soul.

Includes Appendix "Interviews With Seven Kinky Women About What They Want and Need"

"This man owns me; heart, mind, soul and pussy."

—ThornDaddy's wife, Dollie Llama (author, *Diary of an S&M Romance*)

"The most amazing mind-shattering sex I've ever experienced is with ThornDaddy and Dollie Llama, and this little kitty just can't stop purring."

—"the pet" (ThornDaddy and Dollie Llama's girlfriend)

"I had to move. There was so much loud sex, I couldn't think."

—Bill M. (ThornDaddy's downstairs neighbor, January 1999 to April 1999)

**A crucial read for all men
and women interested in kinky love.**



PEEP! Press
PeepPress.com

You can hear ThornDaddy fucking women's brains out weekly on the free podcast, "Submission and Coffee" at **AskDollie.com** and get news and photos at **ThornDaddy.com**

FOR ADULTS ONLY

U.S. \$18.00



256 pages. Self-Help: Sexual Instruction. Health & Fitness: Men's Health.

HOW TO FUCK

A WOMAN'S BRAINS OUT

(v3.0)

By ThornDaddy

Forward by Dollie Llama

(All Web links clickable in PDF)

eBook v3.00 - ISBN: 978-0-97053-928-1
Paperback book - ISBN: 978-0-97053-922-9

RELEASE DATE FOR free eBook ON BitTorrent: APRIL 28, 2008.
(Version 3.0 November 13, 2008): (Free zipped audiobook also listed there.)
http://www.thorndaddy.com/?page_id=207

RELEASE DATE FOR PODOBOOK, Feb 14, 2008, 2008:
<http://podiobooks.com/title/how-to-fuck-a-womans-brains-out>

RELEASE DATE FOR PAPERBACK BOOK ON AMAZON: May 14, 2008.
<http://tinyurl.com/6o7gwr>

Paperback, eBook and Podiobook all released under Creative Commons Attribution-Noncommercial-Share Alike 3.0 License. OK to copy, share, remix and distribute for non-commercial uses, with attribution.

Cover art: "Pleasure", drawing by Amy-Rose.

HOW TO FUCK A WOMAN'S BRAINS OUT is book two of the PEEP! trilogy.

Book one was *Diary of an S&M Romance* (by Dollie Llama): www.smDiary.com. Book three (by ThornDaddy and Dollie Llama, coming eventually) is *Diary of an S&M Marriage*.

HOW TO FUCK A WOMAN'S BRAINS OUT is available as a printed book on Amazon.com, Stockroom.com. Free eBook available via BitTorrent from ThePirateBay.org and GreyLodge.org

Please rate and review on Amazon.com, PodioBooks.com, and ThePirateBay.org, and comment on GreyLodge.org
And tell two friends, and feel free to share any copies. We're on a mission from POD.
Thank you.

Motto of The ThornDaddy Foundation:
He who dies with his art on the most hard drives, wins!

Dedicated to Dollie, my fluffy baby kitty whore.
You're so smart that your brains never stay
fucked out for very long.

And that's part of why I fuck you constantly.

PEEP! Press is the world outreach publishing arm of *The
ThornDaddy Foundation*

Our photos and blog:

www.thorndaddy.com

T-shirts art for book cover available there too!

"SUBMISSION AND COFFEE"

BDSM podcast from a happily married couple.

Free. No iPod needed: www.AskDollie.com

Donate to our world sex ministries:

www.askdollie.com/donate.htm

NOTE:

This an educational sexual resource *for adults only*.

Furthermore, if you are adult, but offended by informative material concerning hot, rough sex between loving, consenting adults, just GO AWAY, and don't come back. There's nothing for you here.

DISCLAIMER

Nothing in this book constitutes legal, ethical or health advice. It is only one man's opinions and experience, and should be taken as such. If in doubt, consult a lawyer, doctor, psychiatrist, or other appropriate professional.

Furthermore, you should not attempt anything described or suggested in this book unless you are willing to take complete responsibility; legally, morally, ethically, sexually, and with regard to your safety or the safety of others.

LEGAL: "HOW TO FUCK A WOMAN'S BRAINS OUT" is a trademark of PEEP! Press. It covers a range of educational products, including printed books, eBooks, audio recordings, videos, seminars, tent revivals and nugatory slappy couple surrogate sessions with individual bisexual (or bi-curious) women.

Clickable Table of Contents

- FORWARD by Dollie Llama
- CHAPTER 1 Greetings, Eager Male!
- CHAPTER 2 Fucking Your Bitches with Respect
- CHAPTER 3 What Women Want
- CHAPTER 4 Who to Fuck
- CHAPTER 5 How to Attract Women
- CHAPTER 6 How to Fuck a Woman's Brains Out – Let's Jump Right In
- CHAPTER 7 How to Fuck a Woman's Brains Out - Kings Don't Live this Well
- CHAPTER 8 How to Fuck a Woman's Brains Out – Holy God of Fuck!
- CHAPTER 9 Where to Find Willing Women
- CHAPTER 10 How to Keep Women Coming Back, and Begging for More
- CHAPTER 11 How to Keep Women in Line
- CHAPTER 12 Overcoming Adversity
- CHAPTER 13 Closing Arguments
- APPENDIX 1 Interviews with Seven Kinky Women About What They Want and Need
- Dollie Llama
the pet
Kitty
Sienna S
Jennifer Neko
Amy-Rose
Mistress Velvet
- APPENDIX 2 Interview with ThornDaddy and Dollie Llama
- APPENDIX 3 Poly Dollie – Essay by Dollie on Finding Joy in Polyamory
- APPENDIX 4 Kink and Sex Educational Resources and Sites



FORWARD

by Dollie Llama

Good on you, you've chosen the right book by the right man. ThornDaddy truly is the King of Fuck.

And I'm a woman who can verify that, as well, perhaps better, than any other of the more than 200 women he's fucked. I'm the lucky bitch he married, the one who sees him when he's happy and sad, energized and depleted, manic and cranky. At his lowest, Daddy has more raw sexual power than any man I've ever known. (And I've known my share of men, maybe not quite the 200 partners Daddy's had, but close enough to speak with confidence.)

At his best, well rested and full of coffee, Daddy is the most creative, dirty, subversive, seductive, masterful, majestic, fun-loving, generous, intuitive, powerful, animalistic, aromatic, soul-sullyng, heart-lifting, goddamn-fucking-amazing lover ever.

Ever.

Yes, I love Daddy. In my world, the sun rises and sets with him. I am his willing and joyful slave, in and out of bed. I am his best friend, his lover, his muse-collaborator. I am his fluffy baby kitty whore. I am proud to be his cum-dumpster and collection of orifices, exclusively for his pleasure.

He deserves it.

Why? Because he gives me everything I need to be the best woman I can. Not just sexually, though no one can nail me to the center of the earth with his cock like Daddy. But Daddy feeds the *whole* woman, not just the pussy. And that's one of the many, many qualities that make him the god in bed that he is.

I met Daddy on Bondage.com, a BDSM (bondage/dominant-submissive/sex magic, or bondage/domination, sadism/masochism) community Web site (back in the days before the buyout by Penthouse and Alt.com - after which, in my opinion, the site started to suck). I am a submissive/slave, and was looking for the right Master who might want to own me. Or, if not that, I was at least looking for a good time.

Let me say this about submissive women: just because a woman is



wired to love to serve does NOT mean she is easy, or undemanding. Subs and slaves expect to be treated to earth-shattering sex as much as, maybe more than, any other women. The way they play requires they be able to trust their partners to care for them and about them, even when that trust and care do not rise to, or develop into, love. They are women who know what makes them wet, and will only accept the men who can do what they need. *I* am a woman who knows what makes me wet and will only accept the man who can do what I need.

Daddy knocked me clean out of my stiletto heels.

When we met, I was amazed, from the first moment. He was cool, smart, sexy and confident. He wasn't pushy, sleazy, or smarmy. He was commanding, but not condescending. He showed me his talents without being egotistical. He was powerful and charmingly humble. He was honest. He continues to be all of this, day in and day out. And he makes me cum like I've lost my mind.

Of course I'm madly in love and lust with him. How could I *not* be?

And if you pay close attention, practice what he preaches, you can have a bit of that glory and majesty for yourself and those you fuck. You should thank him now. If you do it well, he might even make time to read it. That is, if he's not simply too busy fucking my brains out. Or me and one of our playgirls. Daddy's man enough for a whole houseful of bitches. And that's a man worth listening to.

Dollie Llama
Los Angeles,
Spring 2008



CHAPTER 1

Greetings, Eager Male!

Greetings, eager male!

You don't need to be tall, gorgeous, rich, or have a huge dick and a fancy car to get laid. And you don't need to be a type-A "take charge" confrontational kind of guy in all social situations to attract women.

I'm short, middle-aged, and have a bit of a belly. I'm good looking, but not striking. I have an average-sized dick. I'm not rich. I don't have a fancy car. I don't even *own* a car, even though I live in Los Angeles. And while I am in absolute command in the bed with women, social situations bore me. I don't need to be the "star of the party." I leave that up to the blank food tubes with marketing degrees. In fact, I tend to structure my life in a way that *avoids* confrontation.

But I can get two or more hot, wet, willing women, in my bed any night of the week. And I can make 'em cum and scream, all night long.

I've had sex with over 200 women. (An exact number is hard to gauge. I lost accurate count ten years ago, at 159 women fucked.) And most of them moaned, screamed, sweated, came many times, and told me again and again "THAT'S THE BEST FUCKING SEX I'VE EVER HAD!!!!" (And if you have any doubt of this, keep reading. I can prove it.)

I'm now happily married to the coolest woman in the world, Dollie Llama. She's pretty, foxy, smart, fucks me like a whore whenever I want, blows me on command, and lets me bring other girls into our bed. And she's even a great cook. And she never nags me. About anything ever. She's my domestic servant, she's my sex slave. And she's not stupid, isn't "broken", and has great self-esteem. She just loves serving her man.

Anyone who thinks that having a sex slave is misogynistic, know that there are many dominant women (dommes) who love to dominate men, and many men who love to be sex slaves to women. A few of these women and men are my good friends.

As for women who are wired in a way that makes them want to be submissive and serve a dominant man, want to be a sex slave, there are many women like that. Some don't even know



there's a way to do it in a loving relationship, and have been attracted to abusers. That's horribly sad. And I love women. Part of the reason I'm writing this book is to help change this a tiny bit in the world...trying to help smart sweet dominant men learn how to love smart sweet submissive women. And Dollie writes books that help smart sweet submissive women love smart sweet dominant men.

Dollie helped me edit this book, and made a lot of suggestions for it. How many "How to seduce and fuck women" books (or as I call them, **fuck books**) are written with the involvement of a woman? Or in this case, with the involvement of several women? The forward was written by, and the book was proofread and co-edited by, my wife. The cover art was done specifically for this book by a woman. And Appendix One features interviews with seven female friends of mine, explaining "what women really want", in their own words.

Most fuck books are written from the standpoint of "Here are tips to trick stupid women." And most of them tell you "Don't let women know you're reading this book."

Fuck all that.

This book is not about how to trick stupid women. It's about how to better engage in equitable, consensual hot sex with smart women.

And you shouldn't hide this book from women. Hell, you could get laid from just being seen *reading* this book. And many women are pre-ordering it as a gift for their man.

I don't trick women. I *love* women. I celebrate them. I adore them. And they adore me.

I've read most of the fuck books on the market (downloaded free on BitTorrent, and worth every penny). I don't need sex tips. But hey...in the many fields I'm an expert in, I'm always willing to see what the *other* "experts" have to say. Occasionally I learn something. And I believe that you only get old when you stop being teachable.

Only one fuck book that I read (Lee Jenkins' *Female Orgasm Black Book*), was VERY good, although it was also very clinical, with a lot of science and charts and graphs.

A few were about "seducing married women", which I think is fucking evil. And even if you disagree, it can easily lead to being beaten up or shot to death by an irate husband, and it's likely he won't even do much time for it. And they don't bother mentioning this in any of these



books.

Many other fuck books basically tell you “target women by being the loudest guy at the party, then be a total jerk to them, and they’ll love it.” This is nonsense. Women who are worth being with are worth making happy. And you don’t do that by being a jerk. You do that (at least I do that) by taking charge, but doing it with love, and discussing it up front, with their full consent and knowledge, and with no “targeting”, at all.

Most of the fuck books talked a lot about some variation of “Neuro-Linguistic Programming” (NLP), which, in my opinion, is really sinister: you look for body language and speech patterns of the “mark”, then “mirror” it with your own, to gain trust and control. It’s a scientific form of lying that is studied and practiced extensively by used car salesmen, marketing weenies, politicians and other con artists.

NLP strikes me as “being the person your *prey* wants you to be” rather than *just being yourself*. Which is how I prefer to roll.

Other fuck books suggest similar horseshit, from hypnosis to “envisioning her into your bed.” (Any author who suggests writing an actual love letter to yourself as if it’s written by the stranger you’re trying to bed is psychotic, and out of touch with how the real world works to the point that he should be in an institution receiving the care he sorely needs. And I have seen such a fuck book.)

I don’t look at women as prey. Women are majestic creatures who deserve to be venerated, respected and pleased, if for no other reason than that they have a hard enough time on this planet just by being women.

I don’t lie to women, and don’t want you to lie to women. I will show you how to be yourself, keep your soul, be able to sleep at night, and make women happy. *Very* happy.

As for the rest of the fuck books, well, they read like “Letters to Penthouse.” They’re written by horny net geeks who have no verifiable proof that they can actually fuck a woman’s brains out. They just expect you to take their word for it.

I can prove I can fuck a woman’s brains out. Here’s a three-minute excerpt

<http://www.ThornDaddy.com/3-way-fuck.mp3>

of a much longer recording of me fucking the brains out of my wife while diddling our girlfriend with a vibrator, while our girlfriend rubs my



balls. Both girls are cumming, *hard*. (We call our girlfriend the “the pet”, and I’ll refer to her as that throughout this book.)

Or, go to www.ThornDaddy.com , click on the “HOW TO FUCK A WOMAN’S BRAINS OUT” link, and click on the link on that page.

If you think “He got that audio somewhere else, it’s not really him”, then go to www.AskDollie.com and subscribe to “SUBMISSION AND COFFEE”, the free educational sex and culture podcast I do with my wife, Dollie Llama. You can hear weekly new longer sex recordings. (“Submission and Coffee” is the number-one BDSM podcast in the world, gets 70,000 episodes downloaded each month, and is listened to in over 50 countries.) You’ll hear new hot two- and three-way sex with me and the girls, updated weekly. And this book is also linked on that site, so you’ll know it’s really me.

And here’s photos of my typical weekend:

<http://www.thorndaddy.com/?p=162>

<http://www.thorndaddy.com/?p=106>

And it’s not just about sex. We love technology and kitties, too:

<http://www.thorndaddy.com/?p=119>

<http://www.thorndaddy.com/?p=120>

Most fuck books are written by people who can’t even write. Most fuck books are poorly thought out, written in a stilted voice, and riddled with typos. But I’m a professional writer. I make my living writing books (under a different name, the name on my birth certificate).

Most fuck books are written by people who just want to make a buck. Not me. I’m on a mission to make the world a better place, for men, and *especially* for women. I’m giving away eBooks of this on BitTorrent for free. And we’re doing an audiobook of it for Podiobooks.com. And the “Submission and Coffee” podcast is free. *I’m not doing any of this to make a buck*. I’m doing it because I get a kick out of helping people, it’s a nice distraction from the tech writing I do for a living, and I’m doing it because I genuinely believe that if everyone in the world had half as much sex as I do, and were half as good at it as I am, there would literally be no war and very little crime.

So go to the podcast, listen to any of our many lessons (we’re at 145 episodes, as of this printing) of incredibly hot lovemaking, of my wife cumming over and over every time we fuck. Also listen to the episodes with me, my wife and another woman (we’ve recorded this with a few different women), with me making BOTH of them cum for dear mercy, and me telling them both when and how to pleasure me, and each



other.

Listen to all of that, and then tell me I'm not qualified to write this book. You can't. It's impossible. I am qualified, and you should listen to what I have to say.

Many fuck books are written by young men, guys in their mid 20s. These cats don't have the sexual experience or life experience to write an entire book on the subject. I finished writing this book right before my 44th birthday. (It's my gift to myself, to my wife, and to the world.) I'm at an age when a lot of men are reaching for the Viagra, which I've never needed, never even seen. I don't need Viagra. I *am* Viagra. (When I get Viagra spam, I laugh at my monitor out loud and say, "DON'T YOU KNOW WHO I AM???")

As for the title of this book, *HOW TO FUCK A WOMAN'S BRAINS OUT*, I'm speaking figuratively, but I'm also speaking *literally*. I can pleasure a woman until she has so many orgasms that she passes out. I've done this with many women. And I do this at least twice a week with my wife. She's only out for about 60 seconds, it's completely safe, and she loves it. And I get to keep fucking her and play out a fantasy of fucking a drunk girl passed out at a party, something I would never do in real life, because that's a form of rape. But it's a damn fun, safe fantasy with someone who trusts you.

When she comes to, and I finish off and slime my seed inside her pretty petals, or on her sperm-garden belly, tits and face, she HAS had her brains *fucked out*. She's incoherent, gasping, grinning, can't string two words together, and mews like a sexy kitty with a lobotomy.

I will teach you how to do this. (Not with *my* wife, but with any other cool woman.)

Most fuck books promise to get you laid, make you a god in your own bed, and tell you to then toss the woman aside, to make room for the next "victim."

I don't victimize women. I glorify both of us by treating them really really well, even as I'm pumping them full of cum, whenever I want.

While I am a god in my bed, I won't lie to you. I cannot tap you on the forehead and make you into me. Some of this stuff is innate. But a lot of it can be learned, practiced, and perfected. I'm willing to pass this sacred knowledge on to you, my eager student of fuck. **And I don't want you to toss your women aside after you fuck them.** I want to help you find the right one (or the right ones), keep them around,



and make them smile, a lot...and not just in bed. I'll tell you how to do all that, too.

Again, we're not doing any of this to make a buck. That's why the wife and I are releasing this as an eBook under Creative Commons and encouraging people to make copies for their friends. We also released it as a printed book for sale on Amazon. We like printed books. They're fun to hold in your hands, easier on the eyes than reading on a screen, and somehow people take printed books more seriously. And sure, we'll make a few bucks selling the printed books. But me and the wife put the profit back into the expenses of gear and hosting for the podcast.

The wife has a great day job as a paralegal, I have a great job as an author. We don't want to "go pro." Spreading loving understanding of sex is not our job, but it's far more than a hobby. Our books and podcast are more important to us than our jobs. **WE'RE ON A MISSION FROM POD. We have an absolute need to make small changes for the better in the world. We have a need to share what we can about how beautiful safe, sane and consensual BDSM sex can be.**

So, eager male...stick around, grab a mug of your favorite beverage, go sit outside, and enjoy the day. Put your feet up, smile as you think about what the near future will bring to you, and *absorb* this book.

Then grab your gal, or gals, (or if you don't have a gal handy, I'll teach you how to find and attract one), and begin to practice the astounding methodologies and techniques I am about to impart.

And remember: Women are too amazing to be anything *but* proof that there is a god.

ThornDaddy
Los Angeles
Spring 2008
(Version 3.0: November 2008)

CHAPTER 2

Fucking Your Bitches with Respect

I am not a misogynist. I *love* women.

I am not here to teach you to “conquer” women, “chase” women, “put a notch on your belt”, “get over” on women, “get into their pants” or “sport fuck.” Anyone who uses phrases like that, and means it, is a heel. A cad. A scumbag. And I also guarantee I get more ass than anyone who thinks like that. And I get more ass specifically because I do *not* think like that.

I love to hold women down, fuck them, call them my bitch, and even slap their ass, tits or face, but only with women who love it. And I only do it WITH PERMISSION and ONLY WITH LOVE.

Don't be a misogynist. LOVE women. Exist to pleasure them. I do this by doing anything I feel like doing, with permission. This sounds anti-theoretical to some, like it's undoing all the work done by feminists over the past century. But not if it's what the women want. Women's liberation has changed. Modern sex-positive feminism includes the choice to *give up* some of your choices to *someone you trust*.

But if you're given that trust, it cannot be violated. It's too beautiful and perfect and fragile of a gift.

My wonderful wife/sex slave/*sub* (submissive)/best friend in the world, Dollie Llama, once wrote something about choice that I really love:

As for being Daddy's play doll, being Daddy's dirty little cum toilet, I am proud to say I am that and more. So many women are embarrassed by their sexuality, even in today's more accepting, hedonistic world. Today's society is open about our sexuality in ways that would make our grandmothers faint, but the double standard still exists. When Daddy calls me a whore, a slut, a groveling wench fit for nothing but serving him sexually, I am free to be that wanton woman, driven by nothing but my need for the Man who owns me.

And it's my choice. This is something our grandmothers never had. Choice. To me, making the conscious decision to live for my man is the ultimate in freedom, the ultimate in feminist thought in action. Does the fact that Daddy and I often play in these



ways mean we don't enjoy gentle, loving sex? Absolutely not. What it does mean is that those soft interludes are all the sweeter, spiced by the contrast with the fury in which we indulge. But sweetest of all is his kiss on my lips when my ass is blazing.

I think that sums it up perfectly.

(By the way, my wife calls me "Daddy." While this is common with even some vanilla – i.e., non-kinky – people, especially black people, it's more than simply a word for us. I *am* her Daddy. I am her *dom* – her dominant man. I care for her, nurture her, guide her, make a lot of decisions for her, and she's my little girl. This is not derogatory, and it's got nothing to do with a desire to have sex with underage women. I have no desire for that. My wife is 49, and I love that. And I'm younger than her by five years. But she's my daughter, and I'm her Daddy. This "Daddy/daughter" dynamic, if both parties are into it, is beautiful. I am her protector in this world, and I also give her spankings, with her over my knee. Not as punishment for being errant, but as *reward* for doing the right thing.)

ON SEMANTICS: Some people use "sub" and "slave" interchangeably, I do with Dollie, because she's both to me, though she says she feels "slave" is most accurate. One classic differentiation sometimes says "slaves are not allowed opinions, subs are." I allow Dollie to voice her opinion sometimes. The distinctions are subtle, but can also be "slaves are subservient to the master both in and out of the bed, and have less independence, the sub is subservient mostly only inside the bed, and has more independence outside the bed."

It's all just words to me.

Another "protocol" thing with some BDSM people is capitalizing the first letter of the dominant's name or position, and not doing so for the submissive. So you'd have a couple of "Bill and sally" who are "Master and slave" and "He and she." There's a variation on this called "Slash speak", such as addressing a kink audience in writing as "Y/you", and the writer referring to them and their partner as "W/we" and "U/us."

I don't use this. I find it difficult to go from one writing convention to another and back once I'm used to it...and in the course of my day I jump back and forth a lot between BDSM stuff, and paid tech writing / pop culture writing. If I turned in tech writing with slash speak, I'd quickly find myself without a job.



Dollie used to use a small "i" and cap case "You" when e-mailing me from work, but didn't use it with anyone else, and I've asked her to stop. She used it in her book, but since then I realized that reading it kinda hurts my brain. She sometimes signs her name dollie llama when answering e-mails from people about BDSM, but we just had a discussion while I was typing this, and I've told her to sign it "Dollie Llama" (with caps) from now on. Because she's become a well-known writer, and I think that a writer should be bold to the world, and that she should only be submissive to me. She likes that idea very much. (By the way, her writing career started with me telling her to write, then mentoring her, editing her and raising her up. My joke is that when she started I "stood over her with a stick and made her write", but it's really kinda the truth. And now she loves writing and is very good at it.)

CONSENT

The only good sex involves consent, 100% consent with any and all parties. By "consent" I mean "with permission." By "consensual" I mean "with permission." I will use these terms a lot. Consent is about choice. Forced subservience in a woman, whether it's forced by society, religion, or by a man's emotional and mental manipulation and guilt tripping, is abuse. I have no interest in committing abuse.

Sex without consent is rape. And that includes having sex with a woman who is drunk, drugged, passed out or mentally/emotionally unable to really consent. And rape is fucked. Don't go there. Ever.

Consent given freely is beautiful, even if (and especially if) it's consent of the "You can do anything you want to me, sir" variety. When a woman gives her control to a man, for an hour or for life, it can be a very majestically beautiful thing, for both the man *and* the woman.

But you really need to have your shit together to be able to guide and control the whims of another. If you can't run your own life, you have no right running someone else's life. I was not ready for this gift when I was 18. I didn't become ready until I was about 40. I'm 44 now.

Sure, I loved to tie a girl up and slap her ass and call her a slut, and have been doing that for decades. And they loved it. But after the sex, I'd say "get me a glass of water", and they'd invariably say, "I'm not your fucking slave, get it yourself."

Now I'm into women who will do what I want in bed, AND be totally into serving me outside the bed.



I've fucked a lot of women in my life, but that was just training to be the husband I am today. It was part of the process and part of the search. I am not a womanizer. I am an artist. I paint on the inside (and outside) of women using my cock as a brush. I give the gift of making them feel more beautiful than they've ever felt. I get in return, but it is giving. When I make a woman smile and gasp and squirt and scream in the bed, I am giving.

**THE SECRET TO LIFE IS GIVING OF YOURSELF.
GIVING IS THE MOST IMPORTANT THING.**

THE CHRISTIANS KNOW THIS, THE BUDDHISTS KNOW THIS. ALL GREAT PROPHETS OF HISTORY KNOW THIS. (By the way: this is the most important thing in this book, and is worth the price of the book by itself. Especially if you got this book free, because I am giving away a lot of eBook copies, because I walk my talk.)

The best thing you can do is make a being (human or animal) feel good. Feed a stray dog, mentor a child or fuck an adult woman really really well and say "good girl" and pet her and pat her on the head and make her KNOW she's a good girl.

Sex is my prayer. The more I pleasure women, the more God loves me. And this can work for you also.

AND HEAR THIS, EAGER MALE: You are going to learn a lot of secrets in the sacred tome that you hold in your hands (or view on your screen). And you must only use this divine knowledge for GOOD, never for EVIL. If you use it for evil, or to hurt or cause hurt to any female, any one of god's sweet sisters, you may think you got away free and clear. But mark my words, eager male. If you use any of this to "trick" or in any way make a woman sad, one day, later in life, while you sleep, a bitter, skinny woman will cut off your dick and feed it to one of her many cats.

ON HAVING A SEX SLAVE

Basically, I have a sex slave. In fact, I have two. My wife, Dollie Llama, lives to serve me, in the bed and out. She loves being my slave. Often, I'll be doing some housework, and she'll say "Let me do that!" and feel a little sad if I insist on doing it myself. She'll suck me on command, and cum from doing it, and she *loves* sex. And she only has sex with me. Well, me and any girls I tell her to fuck with me.

Sex slaves are not sluts. They're not "easy." They're usually more picky, by far, than slutty girls. Slaves are usually looking for the one, the search can last years, and they're not gonna settle for any asshole. They need the perfect man. They're giving up everything, he's *got* to be worthy.

Nor do slaves have low self-esteem, nor are they products of sexual abuse or poor upbringings. Many slaves are the most together women I know. They're smart, often commanding and in-charge in their day jobs, and slavery at home is a joyous respite from making decisions. It's a spa treatment that never ends. It's living to make someone else happy, and that makes them happy.

Not all women are wired for this, but the ones who are become unhappy when they're not serving a perfect man. (Or a perfect woman. There are certainly submissive women who are exclusively lesbian. They want the perfect *domme* to serve.)

Dollie lives for sexual slavery, and domestic slavery (housecleaning, preparing meals, etc.). She even had the word "slave" tattooed on her pubic mound when I met her.

Early on in our relationship, in fact, before we met (on a kink Website, we were both basically looking for each other, and happened to find each other, and have been living happily ever after ever since) I told her I would never be completely monogamous to any woman. I told her I like having multiple lovers.

The compromise we've come to, and it's not really even a compromise at all, is that I only have sex with other women if Dollie's involved. We like this. In fact, we love this.

It took a lot of work to find our perfect beta sub, perfect part-time sex slave, whom we call "the pet." We had sex with seven other women, one at a time, over the past three years, and none of them created the wonderful three-way satisfaction that the pet has. Other gals were either really into Dollie, and not so into me, or really into me and not so into Dollie, or were looking for "the one" and couldn't ever play "second fiddle" on a long-term basis. Some went looking elsewhere, and some sort of seemed like they wanted to steal me from Dollie. NOT acceptable.

And none of them really interested our minds much. And they were all a little taken aback by how "lovie dovie sweetie-kitty" Dollie and I are. We are so sweet in our manners and speech when together that we



give people cavities. And our first seven women all were either a little disgusted by this, or wanted it for themselves.

the pet is purrfect for Dollie and me. the pet is pretty, smart, sexy, submissive, shy outside the bed but slutty in bed. (Important, because Dollie and are so outgoing that a non-shy girl would get in the way when we're chatting outside the bed.) the pet is glorious, fits us well, does what she's told and loves it, adores us both, but doesn't have a desire to steal either of us away from the other. She's a good conversationalist, Dollie and her love to chat when I'm busy, and shuts up when told to. We *really* like her. the pet comes over two weekends a month, from Friday directly after work until late Sunday night. We have a lot of three-way sex (which we record and put on our podcast, along with a lot of great conversations we have), watch movies together, cuddle together in a three-way kitty pile, and even go out on dates together as a threesome. We go shopping together, go to movies, go on picnics, and more.

I helped Dollie write a book called *Diary of an S&M Romance*. I **highly** recommend you buy it and read it, and not just because we wrote it. Read the reviews on Amazon, and you'll see why this book is such a fine resource for understanding the minds and motivations of intelligent submissive women. Of course, it's *Dollie's* perspective, and she doesn't claim to speak for every sub, but a lot of what she's written resonates with other subs, so check it out. And review it on Amazon after you read it.

Diary of an S&M Romance and *HOW TO FUCK A WOMAN'S BRAINS OUT* are pretty much flipsides of the same coin. If you're serious about this stuff, whether you're male or female, you should own both books. They form a complete set of the male/female kink dynamic.

And review *HOW TO FUCK A WOMAN'S BRAINS OUT* on Amazon, even if you only downloaded it. If you don't have an Amazon account – you have to buy something on there to have an account – start a free account on Podiobooks.com and review this book. And review *Diary of an S&M Romance* on there. (There are Podiobooks of both books.) And listen to "SUBMISSION AND COFFEE" our free BDSM podcast. It's free. No iPod needed, you can listen on your computer: www.AskDollie.com and be sure to tell two friends. We met the pet from our podcast. She is a listener, and offered to come over and do some free housework and ended up sticking around for more.

As for having a consenting sex slave, it's not abuse. It's not bad. It

doesn't degrade the woman if it's what the woman wants, if she wants it and loves it like Dollie and the pet do. It's glorious, and anyone who tells you otherwise is wrong.

You may be reading this book because you're looking for a sex slave. Or maybe you're just looking to get laid, and aren't at a place in your life yet where you want or need a sex slave. Or maybe you're just not wired that way. If you just want to get laid, this book will help you somewhat, help you learn to attract and fuck women. But it's really written specifically for men who want to find a smart, pretty, wonderful slave to join them in a long-term symbiotic relationship that transcends normal "dating" or "friends with benefits." Either way, keep reading, and this may all help you figure out what you want, if you aren't sure yet.

Society's view of BDSM

(quoted from *Diary of an S&M Romance*) Whenever they depict BDSM in movies, and especially on TV, it's usually some serial killer who's got a tortured woman chained up in his (or her) bathroom. This is NOT BDSM, it's not safe, it's not sane, and it's certainly not consensual. Therefore it does not fit the definition of BDSM. This shit makes for good fiction, but it's not how it plays out in my bedroom, and not how it plays out in millions of happy bedrooms the world over.

As far as how it's viewed by the general public, BDSM is the new homosexuality. BDSM occupies the same place in society now that homosexuality did 35 years ago.

The American Psychiatric Association quit considering homosexuality a disease in 1973. Participation in consensual BDSM was deemed to be no longer indicative of mental illness in the year 2000. Yet the stigma attached to BDSM still makes the thought of kink squicky to many folks, even otherwise-hip liberals.

BDSM is considered downright horrifying by a lot of people, even a lot of people who partially or fully accept gays. If I told 20 vanilla friends I'd decided I was a lesbian, 15 would probably say, "Right on." If I told 20 vanilla friends I like to have my man beat me with a cane, and that I love it, 15 would say, "You need help, and you need to leave him. NOW!"

BDSM isn't an illness. And we do have a long way to go....



A FEW ASSUMPTIONS

There are a few assumptions I'm making about you, the reader, based on the fact that you not only picked up this book, but actually read this far. The assumptions are: You are of legal age. (You better fucking be of legal age. You have no reason to read this book if you're not.) You're male, you're heterosexual, or at least bisexual. And you are not a submissive man, you tend toward wanting to take the dominant role with women, at least in bed, at least part of the time. (We'll take about "switches", people who are sometimes dominant and sometimes submissive in Chapter Eight.)

Homosexual men probably won't take much from this book, because this book is about attracting opposites, and truth be told, gay men have more in common with straight men than straight men have with women. All women are a different species. But it's a damn good species. Though, somehow, this book might be of help to you if you're a gay woman trying to learn more about attracting and satisfying women. And it might be of use to straight women to read and then teach to their men, or at least to help them understand what they might be looking for.

Regardless, I'm assuming you love women, love to fuck them (or want to fuck them, if you're still a virgin).

I'm assuming that if you're still reading this far, you've got an open mind. And you're of above average intelligence. And most importantly, I'm assuming that you're a good person. This is not a book for men who want to "trick women" into fucking them. There are other books like that, but they're written by cads. Throw away any advice you've ever heard about how to "get" women, because this is not that, and that is evil. The wisdom you'll learn here is not how to "conquer", or "chase" women. This book starts with the fact that you don't chase women at all. You have to know which ones to approach (or you let them approach you), you tap them on the shoulder (figuratively or literally), you make them smile a little, then you WALK AWAY AND LET THEM COME AFTER YOU. There's no chase in that. It's not the thrill of the hunt, it's the beauty of the dance.

Women are like cats. If you grab a cat and try to pet it, it will run away. But if you pet a cat a little behind its ears, get it purring, let it smell you, and leave the room, it will follow you. This is true with women, literally and figuratively.

We'll start with that, and work forward. For this is not a manual on how to "subjugate bitches." It's a set of principals on *understanding* bitches, on loving them, on finding the ones who need to give up their control

to a man so deeply that it's as integral a part of their being as whether they're left handed or right handed. AND, they may not even know it yet.

This isn't a guide for how to "take advantage of women." In fact, I honestly believe that some woman should write "How to Fuck a Man's Brain's Out." In fact, if some woman does, and it's good, I'll consider publishing it.

DO NOT trick women, it's a violation of *life*, AND can get you killed (or castrated) in your sleep. And it's bad karma. And word will get around.

ON MY USE OF THE TERMS "BITCH", "SLUT", "WHORE", "GIRL", "CUNT", ETC.:

I use these terms with all the love in the world. And with absolute respect for the stunning unexplainable thing that makes women different from, and maybe even superior to, men. Even when they're on their knees begging to suck dick. Many women love to be called these things, in the throes of passion, by someone they love.

I never use these terms in person on women who don't want to have them used on them. I do not use them in the generic. I don't consider all women "bitches", only ones that might want to fuck me and like being called that before, during and after I fuck their brains out. I'm talking here about women who love to be fucked dirty, hard, and love to be called "a dirty fucking slut" in the bed. But when I use these terms, I know it isn't denigrating the woman. I am into domination, but only with women who wish to be dominated. And I'm into domination, but not into true degradation. I'll call my lover "girl" (even though she's an adult), I'll call her a slut, I'll call her "Daddy's little cum toilet", but I say it with a smile. I would NEVER say to her in all seriousness "YOU ARE A PIECE OF DIRT! YOU ARE NOTHING!" There's a big difference. My words uplift women who wish to be uplifted in that way. Telling a woman she's "nothing" is beyond wrong.

This is a self-help book hidden in a fuck book. This book isn't just about how to fuck women, it's about how to become a person worthy of as many women as you'd like. It's a book that contains the secret to life, as well as great tips for living life. And that's all necessary to deserve and enjoy women, and it's necessary so you don't fuck up and have a



woman kill you in your sleep. It happens.

Women are biologically better than men. Sure, on the average, men are better at lifting heavy boxes full of widgets, but women can cum 60 times in an hour. What would you rather spend your time doing?

Women claw at your back and drown you in orgasmic juices, become one with the world from great sex, are totally resplendent, dig their nails into the bed board and shudder with a beauty unimagined. When men have their little squirt, they look more like they're yawning by comparison.

And a lot of women are able to satisfy many men in a night. The most potent motherfuckers, like me, can only satisfy 3 or 4 women.

So, be nice to women. Even as you dominate them with permission, realize they are more perfect creatures than men. Every woman is a little girl inside, a little girl who needs love. You are here to nurture that, to make her whole. So don't fucking lie to them. Don't outright lie, and also don't lie by implication. Don't offer a future that isn't real. Be upfront about your intentions, always.

DON'T BE AN HNG!

"HNG" is internet slang for "horny net geek", and it's not a nice thing to call someone. But if it fits, you should look to change your ways.

An HNG is a man who does not understand the spirituality of sex, does not have a lot of real-life experience with sex, but pretends he does on the Internet. He's the man (or often even boy) who acts badass, thinks he's a dominant male, but is only so on the Internet. If the HNG has had real-life sex experience, it probably didn't end well, and the women probably hate him now. HNGs are usually high-IQ geeks with no social skills. They learn the lingo, but look at women as less than objects. They look at women as avatars in a real-life computer game.

A lot of HNGs will probably buy the book you're holding, (or more likely download it on BitTorrent).

HNGs often live in their mother's paneled basement, well into their 40s. Remember that "King of the Hill" episode "The Witches of East Arlen", where Bobby Hill starts hanging out with some older guys in purple capes who are into "Dungeons and Dragons" and fancy themselves actual wizards? Hank Hill said of one of these guys, who had all the markings of a horny net geek, even though he was never shown using a computer, "Bobby, you don't need a crystal ball to see Ward's future."



He's going to live with his mother until she dies, and maybe for a few weeks after."

HNGs are the guys who will walk into a chat room (or into a real room, if they've had some fake courage in the form of a few drinks) and yell, "HEY BITCHES, WHAT'S YOUR AGE, NAME, AND WHEN YOU GONNA SUCK MY DICK, BITCH???!!"

Real men do not act like this, and real women don't like this. If you ARE an HNG, and are reading this book, you need to PayPal me 500 dollars immediately, here on the donation site:

<http://www.askdollie.com/donate.htm>

I will use the money to buy nice things for several women, to help undo the damage you're about to do. It's your tax. Pay it, NOW.

If you're not an HNG, feel free to donate anyway. We'll use it to further the loving agenda of the ThornDaddy Foundation, the agenda of ending the war of the sexes by teaching dominants and submissives to lovingly complete each other.

If you're not an HNG, keep reading, eager male. This book "surrounds hate and forces it to surrender."

This book may change your fucking life.

CHAPTER 3

What Women Want

Romance and sex are like computers:
an interesting mix of science and voodoo.
—ThornDaddy

Any man who thinks he's "getting over" on a woman somehow by "getting her" to sleep with him is sorely deluded. Women don't want to be "wined and dined", "played" or otherwise manipulated.

Women decide, at least subconsciously, if they want to sleep with a man the first time they meet him. Sometimes before, if he's an artist like me. (They get to "know" him through the art.) Women actually have more "choice" in who they sleep with than men. Men will sleep with any woman, in the right situation. Women will sleep with men who



they think would produce good offspring, even if they have no desire to ever have kids. Even if their tubes are tied.

This is programmed into men and women. It harkens back to survival of the species of primitive mankind. It exists in most animals, too: the male of the species tries to fuck as many females as possible, and the female tries to only mate with males that they feel (or that their DNA feels) have a good chance at being a good provider, or at least a good sperm donor.

Society has evolved to the point where no one has to go out and club dinner over the head or starve. Women can earn their own living. And I think this is a good thing. But women are still programmed to find the right mate, and men are still programmed to fuck anything female of their species. But as part of this evolution, some women have smartened up and pick men based not on ability to swing a club, but on ability to capture their heart, mind and pussy. This is a very good thing, if you're smart and funny, and a lot of these women are submissive.

The woman may prefer to be physically on the bottom during sex and may be the receptor to the male's aggressor, but the woman is actually on top - emotionally, spiritually, even with regard to economy of movement.

The woman ALLOWS the man to summit her submit, do ten times as much work; grunt, sweat and generally look and sound ridiculous. He has his puny little squirt while she lies there, claws his back, emerges resplendent, and she has an orgasm that dwarfs his by a power of ten.

Since I believe that women are, as I've said, biologically superior to men, then why do women (at least the ones I'm interested in) want to be dominated by men? Again, it's innate.

"HOW COME YOU NEVER FUCK ME LIKE YOU HATE ME ANYMORE?"

I used to fuck this girl, Debbie....I started fucking her the day I met her...she was a sawed-off, little bite-sized voluptuous snack pack sex-thang....She liked me to be almost violent with her...call her names, tether her to the bed posts and lash her ass with a belt whilst fucking her everyhole as hard as I could. As I got to know her, I began to like and love her. For some reason I couldn't fuck her like that anymore. I would make sweet, gentle love to her. She didn't like that as much. She'd whimper..."How come you never fuck me like you hate me anymore?"

I know that men dominate women in fucking, I know that many women want to be held down and violated. My fix on the stupid old saying,

"Women just want to be dragged off to a cave and raped..." is my addendum, "...WITH PERMISSION...BY SOMEONE THEY LOVE."

True rape is horrible. Actual rapists should be ground into cat food.

But good, hard consensual sex, the type I like, the type where two (or more) people agree to have sex, and fuck each other's brains out, when it's done right, is consensual rape. There is something so arcane and mystical about this dance that we do...it is somehow frighteningly beautiful - as well as being beautifully frightening. A woman has it in her nature to want to be forcefully taken by a man. Kissing is lovemaking, and it is awe-inspiring...but fucking is not making love. A good fuck is more a consensual rape than an act of love. That is the nature of the beast, and the beast of the nature.

I feel like Jesus' son on all the smack in Manhattan when one of God's sisters is open before me like a flower, taking my cock deep into her womb with rhythmic, convulsive swallows while clawing rivers into my back. And women feel about ten times as good as this if you hold 'em down and fuck 'em right.

Unfortunately, a lot of women end up with assholes instead of loving dominant men. The woman's DNA confuses a hard attitude, a type-A personality, or even asskickings with strength. Women are programmed for the survival of the species, automated to mate with the superior partner. But since society generally believes that dominating women lovingly doesn't exist, not much mainstream educational materials are available to women to show them the difference. So they end up with the asshole, because none of their sweet sisters has sat down and explained it to them.

But what a lot of women really want, is to for a sweet, smart, strong man to "fuck her like he hates her." And they want it done with love, and respect, even as the man is calling her a filthy whore. And they want a man who can do all that, and make them smile and think with conversation between all the orgasms.

WHAT YOU NEED TO HAVE TO GIVE WOMEN WHAT THEY WANT

Well, if we're talking about submissive women, which we are, you need to be wired for it. A guy who has nary a dominant bone in his body probably can't pull it off, or at least can't pull it off well.

As for being a dominant male, again, I'm not talking about that loud guy at the party who needs to be the center of attention. I'm not talking about the guy who has a high-pressure sales job and lives to crush



the other guy, needs to “make it to the top” in business, romance and all of life. I’m not talking about the guy who gives his business card to every skinny woman, only skinny women, and only to men if he thinks they can do business together. I’m not talking about the guy who makes himself feel better by making other people feel bad.

True sweet dominants, the kind that happy, loving sex slaves live to serve are pretty much the complete opposite of this. They tend to avoid parties, and if they attend one, they’re happy finding the most interesting person there, male or female, and spending the night off to one side intellectually interacting with that person. They don’t need to be the center of attention. They tend to avoid conflict, don’t need to dominate the whole world, only the little part of it that wishes to be dominated. They tend to have interesting low-pressure jobs, many are artists and many are self-employed and work at home, because they don’t want a boss (or anyone) dominating them. They’ve structured their life in a way to maximize pleasure, and do not obtain pleasure from inflicting mental or physical pain on anyone. (Caning a woman’s ass who loves it is not inflicting pain. It’s giving pleasure to someone who wants it.) True dominants like to make people feel better, not worse, and most of them won’t discount a woman just because she doesn’t look like a model on the cover of a magazine.

(If this all sounds like you, keep reading. If it doesn’t, go buy one of those “How to trick women” fuck books.)

WHAT ELSE YOU NEED TO DATE A GREAT WOMAN

You don’t need to be rich, but do need to be self-sufficient. If you’re broke, she’ll assume she’ll have to pay for everything. You shouldn’t have to treat her on every meal. (Women who expect this are to be avoided. They’re whores and they lie about it.) But you need to be able to at least cover your own ass. But that’s not that hard. Most any full-time job that pays a little more than minimum wage can cover this, if you don’t live extravagantly. I don’t live extravagantly.

Even if you move in with a woman, you always need to have enough money to leave at any time. Type-A guys buy spinning hubcaps. I buy *possibilities* by not buying spinners and keeping at least a few grand in my own (not joint) bank account. My wife knows about this bank account. You shouldn’t need to keep it secret. Don’t lie to women. If you have to lie to women, you’re either with the wrong woman (or women) or you’re the wrong man. I’m not sure I can change that, but I can tell you what’s the right man.

YOU DON'T NEED TO LOOK LIKE A MALE MODEL

Marge Simpson: "A woman will stay with a man she loves even if his face is bitten off by crocodiles."

Homer: "I may hold you to that, Marge!"

There's a lot of truth to this. And I've seen out-of-shape guys dating hot women in the kink world. Because to most doms and subs, the eternal is more important than the external. Subs are usually in it for the long run, looking for the run, and while looks may hold some importance, it's usually way below compatibility. Good subs and good doms are the same species, and we are all a different species from the rest of the world. We recognize the glow of our own species when we see it.

CONFIDENCE

"A wise man makes his own decisions, an ignorant man follows."
— Chinese proverb

The only thing *HOW TO FUCK A WOMAN'S BRAINS OUT* has in common with the other fuck books is that I'll agree that confidence in men is important to women. And that's pretty much the only thing all these "systems" can agree on with each other. (Again, mine isn't a system. It's just me passing on my experience and hope to you. "Take what you need and leave the rest", as they say.)

But my idea of confidence isn't the same as the macho fuck books' idea of confidence. Again, it's not the need to crush the other guy. It's the ability to feel comfortable in your own skin, be masterful at things you love to do, and live to give.

There's a movie that explains well what women really want. It's called *The Tao of Steve*,
<http://www.imdb.com/title/tt0234853/>

The Tao of Steve stars a fat man as a total mellow laid back guy who gets all the babes. The main character (named Dex, *not* named Steve, ironically) never mentions dominance or submission, but he is, in a way, a dominant male filled with pussy magnetism.

(Skip the last ten minutes of the film where Dex "learns a lesson" and "changes his ways." That's the Hollywood influence. I'm sure some producer came along and tinkered with the script to put that in, to try to make it "commercial.")



Dex is likeable, if sort of a scumbag. And he sort of has a "system", but only very reluctantly explains it after his male friends bug him about it for a while. It breaks down to this:

First: Eliminate desire; you cannot score if you want to score.

Second: Do something excellent in her presence

Third: Retreat; women will chase what they cannot have.

That's pretty much most of it. Live the inner "Steve", like Dex did. Remain teachable, and inquisitive about life. Confidence as an adult comes from being no longer childish, but remaining childlike in many ways. Be an adult but keep the kick-ass inquisitiveness of children. Most adults lose it. Especially Mike from Marketing. ("Mike from Marketing" is my generic name for all of those type-A assholes.) Mike from Marketing lost his soulfulness, and his soul, the first day of kindergarten. Because that's the day he realized he could have fun making other people miserable.

REMAINING TEACHABLE

The phrase, "A wise man makes his own decisions, an ignorant man follows" doesn't mean to be mean or cocky or unteachable. There's another famous saying about wisdom, "A wise man is wise because he knows he doesn't know everything." (Or as the hair-rock pop band "Kansas" paraphrased it when I was 12, "...and if I claim to be a wise man, it surely means that I don't know.") This is absolutely true.

When I was 20, I knew for a fact that I knew everything, and there was nothing that I didn't know. I knew it *all*. Now, at 44, I know *much* more, and also know that I still have a lot to learn. That's how you don't get *old*, regardless of your physical age...by remaining teachable. And women love men who know a lot about a lot of things, but are still open-minded about what they don't know.

A great way to show women that you're open minded is to read a paperback copy of this book in places where you're likely to be seen reading it by potential fuck women. It's a great ice-breaker.

If you downloaded this book as a free eBook, go to www.ThornDaddy.com and click the link on the right to order the paperback on Amazon. You can also print one of our *HOW TO FUCK A WOMAN'S BRAINS OUT* T-shirts from that link. The T-shirt should accomplish the same goal: conversation with women who love sex. And any bitches who approach you and tell you they're offended by the title, or cover art, are immediately crossed off your list. It's not only a good ice-breaker, it's a

good for weeding out the ones you shouldn't waste time on.

Some lesser men would be afraid to be seen reading a book called *HOW TO FUCK A WOMAN'S BRAINS OUT*. But truly sexy women will see that while you may already be a good fuck, you want to learn everything there is about being a great fuck, and will probably strike up a conversation. Women love men who are into self-improvement.

A NOTE ON MY "I'M RIGHT, THIS IS HOW IT IS" TONE:

Any time I make blanket statements about "all women want this" and "most men like that", know that I'm not judging you if you feel differently. I'm just saying what I like. As I'm a dominant male, I tend to be pretty adamant about my beliefs, in my house. That's how the world works, in my book. And my book, *this book*, is my house. I'm giving this book away free on the Internet (as well as selling printed copies on Amazon), so if anyone doesn't like it, they can have a cheerful refund on their zero-dollar purchase price. And if none of this suits you, hey, write your *own* book.

And I understand "YKINMK", a common kink acronym for "Your kink is not my kink", which basically means "As long as it's safe, sane and consensual, I won't judge it." Kink is so ostracized that we have to at least be kind to each other, because the rest of the world isn't nice to us.

If you really want to know what women want, don't skip reading Appendix One of this book, "Interviews with Seven Kinky Women About What They Want and Need." It's a batch of female friends of mine, telling you what they want and need from men, *in their own words*.

But if you want my summation of it, from my position as glorious fucker of women, here it is:

Keep your bitches feeling safe, not just feeling it, but really KNOWING it, and you can use them for your own pleasure, and they'll thank you. But you have to understand that calling them a slut doesn't make them less than you. In fact, they are more than you. A good woman who makes your life better, not worse, is the most precious gift you'll ever receive.



CHAPTER 4

Who to Fuck

(To any fussy grammar nazis who beat off to Strunk & White and think "Hey, this should be 'Whom to Fuck' rather than 'Who to Fuck', you're not on top of it enough to know that most experts agree that, due to common usage influencing the language, "whom" is becoming archaic and optional. "Who" works for both subject and object now. So there.)

Half the world is women. And they've all got some secrets under their skirts, and many will share those secrets with you.

When I use the word "fuck" in the title *HOW TO FUCK A WOMAN'S BRAINS OUT*, I'm not just talking about intercourse. Sure, that's a lot of it. But I want to teach you everything else that will make you able to bring a woman to want be your love slave.

It's a lot to know. A lot *in* the bed, and a lot *out* of the bed. A lot in your *soul*. And you'll never have as much fun practicing something you learned in a book. Ever.



If you do everything in this book, you can own a woman's entire body and her mind. But some skirts are better sweet candy to make you happy, and others are a good bet at driving you nuts or even ruining your life.

Here we'll break it down:

DON'T FUCK KIDS

This is rule number one.

Don't seduce kids, you'll go to jail. And you'll be scum. Kids have a hard enough time as it is being kids without you sticking your dick in them. And in jail, you'll be raped, beaten and murdered. Killers need someone to look down on, and that someone is kiddie touchers.

Age of consent is 18 in many places, lower in some places, and higher in others. Find out what the age of consent is in your community. I'm no lawyer, and this is not legal advice (nothing in this book constitutes legal advice; if in doubt, consult a lawyer). But know the age of consent in your state and country. And keep in mind that if you fuck a younger person in a place where that's legal if you live there, you can still go to prison in your own country, for *sexual tourism*.

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sexual_tourism

Basically, my feeling is this: Beyond the fact that you could go to prison for a long time, and beyond the fact that I am usually attracted to women over 30 only, and have no attraction to children, children cannot really "consent." Even if they're into it. Children are too inexperienced with life to make informed decisions concerning something as heavy as sex.

And I know there's arguments about this, and often these age of consent laws are made by Christians who follow a Bible filled with girls who got married at age 12 or 13 to older men. But that was ritualized abuse, and I find no fun in the idea. And times *have* changed, and it's a good thing.

A good place to start with age of consent is here:

www.avert.org/aofconsent.htm

but keep in mind, it changes from time to time in places, it can be different depending on the age and sex of the people involved, and anyway, don't take legal advice from a fucking Website! Again, consult a lawyer.

Check the chick's ID. And anyway, it's better to fuck older women, women old enough that you don't even need to check their ID. Then you will never have this issue. And they're just better, for a number of reasons I'll enumerate below.

DON'T FUCK ADULT KIDS

Don't seduce adults who are emotionally or mentally kids. It's not fair game. They can't really "consent" either. They're too broken, or too stupid.

Most fuck books teach you to only "target" this type. I say "fuck that." I like a challenge. I also like to be able to have a meaningful conversation between fuckings, conversations that don't involve fashion, reality TV stars, Harry Potter or popular music. If you're smart, you will too.



DON'T FUCK MARRIED WOMEN

Don't fuck married women. And yes, I've seen a fuck book that specifically teaches you to target married women. The "writer" does have a bit on why it's morally OK (I disagree), but doesn't mention anything about the more pressing issue: The woman's husband may literally *kill* when (not "if") he finds out.

And he probably will find out, no matter how pissed or disappointed with him the wife seems right now. If she gets back with him, she'll tell him everything. She loves him. That's why she married him. She'll tell him all, including names, and he'll blame his shortcomings on you rather than himself, and come gunning for you.

This type of shit is far less common in the kink community than the vanilla world. There are exceptions, but it's been my experience that kinky men are far less likely to lie to get into someone's pants, and kinky women are far less likely to cheat on their man.

Since kinky people are more honest about sex and how it can exist with and without love, kinky couples tend to be more open with each other, less insecure, and more open minded about sex in general. Kinky people also tend to be more open to the idea of having different partners in their lives to fulfill different needs. It is not uncommon for a kinky person to be married to their kinky spouse, and one or both of them to have another kinky person on the side, and everyone knows about everyone. This is called *polyamory*. Here are two good places to start if you're interested in learning more about "poly":

www.polyamory.org

www.polyamoryonline.org

Don't fuck married women, or women with boyfriends, unless they have a sane poly agreement with their significant other, you've talked to him, and he's not crazy. (Talk to him on the phone. Any crazy woman can make up a fake e-mail address and write you pretending to be her husband.) Make sure they have no entanglements. Ask them, and use that term. Ask them, up front, "Do you have any entanglements that will complicate my life? Do you have any ex-lovers you're still in love with, or who are still in love with you? Do you have any men who feel they have a claim on you? Anyone getting out of prison soon that I should know about? Any stalkers? Over-protective brothers? Anything? Let me know now, please. My life is good, fucking you could make it better, but I need to know if there's anything that comes with the deal that could make it worse."

KNOW YOUR RIGHTS

Certain types of "abhorrent sex" (i.e. the bulk of this book) are illegal in some places, even between consenting adults. Even between married consenting adults. God only knows what gives lawmakers in some places the idea they should have the right to regulate what adults do in their beds, but in many places, they do. Much of this is protected in the United States by Supreme Court interpretations of the Constitution of the United States. However, there are many US lawmakers, particularly in Texas and Alabama, who would love to wipe their ass with the Constitution and jail adults who use a vibrator on their wife or have consenting bondage sex with other adults or have consensual same-sex relations. Fuck those lawmakers in the ass with a giant spiked dildo and no lube. Shame on them. They'll burn in their Christian hell when they die, because God loves orgasms. All of 'em.

Dollie and I know our rights, and take them very seriously. And we like to share our bit of knowledge with others. Episode 95 of "SUBMISSION AND COFFEE" is Dollie Llama reading the complete Constitution of the United States, including all amendments. Get it free here:

http://www.askdollie.com/SAC-0095-US_Constitution.mp3

This was blogged by a lot of people and got hundreds of thousands of downloads the first week it was up.

Wired magazine called this reading "a civics lesson on your iPod."

FUCK OLDER WOMEN AND PLUMP WOMEN

Age is wisdom, when it comes to sex. Older women are better at sex. A tired old plump sex pot in lingerie and lipstick is infinitely more sexy to me than a 22-year old skinny "pretty" (but willful) hottie in a bikini. I'd rather look at photos of (and meet in real life) some port-of-booty-call whore whose belly is a sperm garden and has a sign over her chamber doors that says "billions and billions served." (Though I would never pay for such a woman, or *any* woman. I have never paid for sex, and never will. We'll talk more about this in Chapter Five.)

I can find the beauty inside any woman, and bring it out. So can you. And it's easier than fighting with the type-A assholes for younger bitches and the skinny models. Skinny girls will kill you in your sleep, or at least marry you, wait until you're rich, divorce you, and take it all.

Sure, there are a few skinny and/or young girls out there that will make you sexually happy, and not drive you nuts, but it's been my experience that young and plump or older and skinny is better, and



older and plump is golden.

And you can spank or cane plumpers on the ass harder and longer without hurting them, and they tend to like to be spanked more, anyway. And I find that plump women tend to be more into anal sex.

Also, since most of the world is ageist and fatist, if you have an older and/or plump woman, fewer men are going to try to "steal" her from you.

Note: I am not ageist. I would totally do a 19-year old plump girl with my wife, if the girl wasn't crazy, willful, and wouldn't kill us in our sleep. I am thinist – I don't usually like skinny women. (See my formulae for *fattening up skinny bitches* in Chapter Eight.)

AGE AND LOOKS

Plump young women have a firm plumpness to them. It looks and feels good. But all mammals, as they age, lose elasticity in their skin. Plump older women, especially if they've had a few kids, and/or gained and then lost some weight a few times, tend to have stretch marks, which do not look firm, particularly in their boobs, tummies and asses. No matter, just put her in a slip and dim the lights, and she'll look and feel good. Hell, all women should be fucked in a dim room in a slip. They all look and feel better that way. It's a more mystical, religious experience.

GOOD TO GO

Also, if you look at a woman's profile on an online site and she lists "anal sex" as something she likes, you're probably golden. Even if you don't like or need to fuck a woman in the ass, women who love to be fucked in the ass tend to love all the other things I do that make a woman my slutty little slave, in and out of the bed.

MAKE 'EM PRETTY

If they look lonely (in porn or in real life), especially older gals, I don't look at them as pathetic. Women are dealt a shitty hand in this world, just by being women. I look at women as beings I can make happy. Not like "Oh, that fat bitch will be grateful for my cock, it's charity." No, not at all. More like "How can I be of service, and make her happy for an hour or three? Make her feel beautiful. Hel,I make her BE beautiful, even if only while wearing my pretty cum inside and out." I'll pet her and kiss her and treat her like a goddess.

The more I pleasure women with my tongue, cock and words and hands, the more God loves me.

My friend Reuben once told me, "A REAL man will have sex with any woman, anywhere, any time." And I agree. I'll fuck any woman from 18 to 80 who will get down with my plan, not try to push me around, do my bidding, put on a slip, lipstick and pumps (high heels), let me use her majestically and poetically as my little sperm-garden pleasure dump, and say to me "You can do anything you want", and mean it. And we'll both walk away from it smiling.

Sure, I'll turn the lights down low, but that's not because I don't wanna see her. (I'd turn the lights down low even to fuck a skinny college girl, if I had any reason to do that.) Turning down the lights is to intensify the mood, heighten the other senses, and create a cloud of pussy smell, perfume, soft touch, shapes, textures, tastes, and love.

A real man will fuck, and even go down on, a woman on her period. Don't be a bloody pussy about pussy blood. Love it, live it, lap it. And use your finger to draw pictures on her belly with it. And she'll thank you for not being a pussy.

I will lick the pussy and (clean) asshole of most any woman. I will kiss most any woman. I will lay most any woman down, pet her all over, whisper sweet somethings in her ear, celebrate her breasts and throat and inner thighs with my hands and tongue and cock, then hold her hands up over her head and, with permission, nail her to the fucking center of the earth with my cock.

I once wrote in my notebook:

There is no illusion as radiant and tentative as the endless reality of just about any woman crocking on your knob. It really helps if the woman loves you and is pretty and dressed in lingerie in a warm and radiant room full of candles. But hell, sometimes I'd settle for dirty quick sex with an anonymous bull dyke in a flannel shirt standing up in a truck stop men's room. I ain't picky. Girls that suck dick are Beautiful girls.

Free my Soul in the slavery of your mouth. Exonerate me baby, all night long. You are my rockin' pussygata endorphin toilet. Strangers are lovers I just haven't met yet.

Of course, this was me before I was married. In a hot punk band, touring the world, with all kinds of women throwing themselves at me. I tend to have exceptions now, and they're less based on looks than on personality.

I love beautiful women, I venerate them. My wife is beautiful. (She also



loves to fuck, loves sucking cock as much as she loves to fuck, is a great conversationalist but knows when to shut up. She's a really good writer, artist, cook, and housekeeper, even on top of that, she has a good job, owns our house and makes me smile. A lot. And she never nags me. About anything. Ever.) But I can find beauty in most women, bring it out and play with it. But I won't fuck crazy women anymore, because I only fuck women with my wife, and crazy is a hard limit for her.

DON'T FUCK CRAZY GIRLS

Crazy girls are usually easy to get into bed, are usually great lays, and are *ALWAYS NOT WORTH IT!*

My feeling on crazy girls: "I don't have to do that anymore."

And don't fuck girls who are "magazine cover gorgeous", know it, and act like the world owes them something for it. They're all crazy girls, or at least will become crazy girls once their youth starts to fade and they realize they have nothing else.

BETTER

Better is pretty girls who don't know it. And smart, but not quite as smart as you. (Though my wife and I have the exact same high I.Q. And we're both Geminis, if that holds any credence with you.)

It's good if your mate has similar interests, and you'll do even better if you can also mentor and teach her. She should have slightly lower self-esteem. Not so you can take advantage of her, but so you can nurture her, guide her and boost her esteem. Maybe a little plump. Or a lot plump. And older. Older girls better. Divorced women with adult children who don't live in the same state are best. Again, you want no entanglements.

I don't usually fuck gals under 30. Gals under 30 usually don't know what they want from life. They aren't as experienced sexually, haven't usually loved and lost hard, and are still girls in some ways. I like women, not girls. And I've researched this a lot, on my journey of fuck, and I find that the smart fucker guys usually go for the older, not the younger, women.

I don't usually fuck skinny girls. I don't find them as attractive as curvy bitches. I've researched this a lot, on my journey of fuck, and I find that the smart fucker guys usually go for the plump, not the bone.

I like plump girls. They're better in every way. They eat what they want, fuck who they want. And they can't get enough of the things that

make life fun: cock, laughs, food, the anointed blessing of semen on their belly, even booze and drugs. Plump girls do not deny their desires. Whereas skinny bitches are so hungry, they'll kill you in their sleep.

Plump girls rock. And I like the look and feel. My life's a plump buffet...

Basically, my advice to you, eager male, is this: You will probably have a better sex life if you mostly only fuck women at least ten years older than whatever age you're at, and only fuck women that are at least 20 pounds heavier than that skinny bitch in your past who made your life hell. (We all have one of those in our past, right? Right.)

Sleep with older women and plump women. They're more adventurous and more into doing what it takes to be taken round the world in your bed. You can make them wear slips, pumps, lingerie, perfume, lipstick, etc. You can spank 'em too, and they're likely to like it, and not have the issues with it that younger and skinnier women will have.

From *Diary of an S&M Romance*:

...I love how that much sex makes a woman look.

When you think about it, everything women do to make themselves more attractive is to make them look fucked, ravished and ravishing. When you fuck a woman for hours, her hair rats out (looks like teased hair), her lips get swollen and red (collagen injections and lipstick), her cheeks flush (rouge), her eyes swell and the lids turn dark (eyeliner, mascara, eye shadow) and she smells pretty (perfume).

All this "girling up" (and also the spanking) makes it easier and more fun to fuck them over and over. And if you want, it will be easier to keep them coming back.

Older is good. Plump is good (even if they're younger). Older and plump is best, especially if they're divorced. Not because they're easier to bed, but because they have more experience. Fucking a woman who's been fucked for 30 years of her life is better than fucking someone who's been fucking for five years. The more experienced lover is a better lay. And you'll become a better lay, intuitively, simply by interacting with her body. Fucking middle-aged divorcees is the grad school of sex.

And find a good listener. A girl who can listen, can add interesting inter-



actions, but one who knows when to shut up. My wife has no problem with me saying "Daddy needs to think" or "Daddy's doing math, dear" (I call anything complicated on the computer "math", even if it does not involve numbers, because it feels like math to my brain) and she will shut up. She knows her place, and it is this: as a glorious creature who is magnificent enough to complete me.

TRAINING YOURSELF TO PREFER THE BETTER WOMEN

You may have a bias against plump or older women. If you do, you're wrong. That bias was put there by mainstream media magazine covers. By the billion-dollar industry of making women feel they're not skinny enough, so the industry can pick their pockets by remote control after breaking down their souls.

Teach yourself to undo this. Look at a lot of plump girl porn and mature lady porn. I recommend

www.thehun.net

And look at the archives (listed by month) at the bottom of that page.

Also make sure you check out the Hun's overflow:

www.thehun.net/overflow/

Bookmark those two pages and check back often, as they're both updated daily (!)

Looking at porn of non-young non-skinny bitches is a great way to train yourself to appreciate the finer things in life, and not buy into "the lie." (I'll look at skinny bitch porn once in a while, but only if the women are doing something really filthy, like fucking five men, or licking a stranger's asshole in a public restroom. Of the 1200 porn images I have on my hard drive at any given time, probably 30 of them are skinny bitches. And I feel the same way about them in real life as sex partners.)

Porn is great. It is not anti-woman. As Lydia Lunch said, "No pornography exploits women. It exploits men. It's the men that are made to look stupid, silly and ridiculous, chasing after the golden elixir. Women look beautiful, do what they wanna do and get paid for it."

Real porn, with real people having real sex (usually amateur porn, not that slick North Hollywood shit) is amazing. It's beautiful. Porn often captures the moment of orgone joy when a woman is at her freest, her most stunning, like a snapshot of a butterfly emerging from the cocoon. Good porn shows the microsecond when a lady opens her soul and pours it out on the



bed for all to see. Good porn is art, poetry, and magic, all in a single frame or clip.

TheHun.net has the best free porn anywhere. Seriously. It's just links to other sites; they don't host porn. But the other sites all have images and videos on the linked sample page without you having to pay or sign up. They're all ads for pay sites, but they all have 10 or 20 GREAT images on each free page. Click on the thumbnails, get the large version, right click, and save. (After you get a few, you'll have to start typing random characters at the end of the file name, because many use the same file naming conventions.)

Hit "CTRL" and F and search on TheHun.net's pages for the terms "plump", "mature", "old" "wife" "BBW" "grandmother" "grandma" "fat" and "curvy." Amass a HUGE collection of still images and videos. Look for girls older and fatter than you're looking for, as well as what you're looking for. Put them into a slideshow program (I recommend "Windows Picture and Fax Viewer" on a PC, and "Preview" if you're on a Mac.) Whenever you have some free private time, put on your slideshow and beat off. It helps if you find the photos of women in lingerie (curvy women, as I've said, look best in lingerie), lipstick, pumps, on their knees or backs totally submitting to a man, or to several men.

Skinny young bitch porn doesn't do it for me. Bah. Pleah. *Boring.*

You can also have your bitch blow you while watching a slideshow of porn. I recommend the "Laptop Laidback" laptop holder for this. <http://www.laptop-laidback.com/>

You can set it up over your belly like a TV tray while your bitch, or bitches, service your sacred cock. Throw some photos of your bitch into your porn folder, so you can make her feel involved. While she's blowing you, tell her when her picture shows up and tell her she's hot.

You can also put your porn, especially the video, on and have your bitch watch it, often. Either with you, or while you're busy working on the computer or whatever, waiting and available to have her pussy, ass and mouth at your service. Watching lots of porn will teach her the best ways to suck a cock, if nothing else.

(Dollie adds, "If it's plump and/or mature porn and she's plump and/or mature, it will make her feel beautiful, sexy and validated. All the better to gleefully do your beautiful bidding.")

After a few months of watching old lady porn and plumper porn, you'll forget about those 20-year-old willful skinny bitches that most people



think they like, and will get you on the path of the TRUTH, which is this: plump bitches and older bitches are the best lays, HANDS DOWN!

BE PROUD OF WHO YOU FUCK

Ever heard that old biker joke?:

Q. What does fucking a fat woman have in common with riding a Moped?

A. It's fun until your friends find out.

That's wrong too. Fucking wrong. You should be proud of who you fuck, no matter what. Tell that voluptuous beauty to doll up, do her make-up and hair, put on a pretty dress and then take her to the movies. Take her for dinner. Take her for a walk in the park and feed the ducks. Hold her hand. Kiss her well, kiss her hard, and mean it.

You should be willing to be seen with anyone you're willing to fuck. Walk with her proudly, arm in arm, as if to say, "Yeah, I'm *fucking* her. And she's cool. And I'm getting much more sex, and greater sex than you get from your skinny willful bitch who tells you what to do."

Show off your woman. You're *more* of a man that way. Treat your slut like a goddess, and you'll walk taller and more confidently down any street in the world.

SUBMISSION

I like submissive women. Not easy women, not garden variety "sluts" or "party girls." Those types are usually NOT submissive, they're usually really selfish, and want to fuck a lot because it pleases *them* . Nor do I like doormats. I like emotionally healthy, smart, sexy, curvy women who also happen to be submissive. Not to everyone, but to men they love, to really cool men they like. These women exist. If you're a dominant male, but not a prick, not abusive, you can find them. In fact, they're already looking for YOU.

Nor do I think all women should be submissive to men. Some men like to be submissive to dominant women, and I think that's just nifty. There is no inequality in submitting by choice. It's not for everyone, and it's not wrong. It doesn't make a woman (or a man) less of a human to submit. In fact, it makes you *more* of a human, because you've finally found your niche.

My wife and I do not fight. I make most of the decisions, she likes it, trusts me, and it's great.

Submission to a good dominant is the end of the war of the sexes. Period.

A SLUT female is a man with his dick turned inside out that she needs filled.

A SUB / slave is a woman who has her soul turned inside out....She's been skinned and salted by life, and needs the RIGHT man to wash that salt off with his semen and kisses and love and make her whole.

That's your job, and that's who I recommend you fuck. Women who want to be licked clean and celebrate this thing called life and celebrate it well, under your hand, under your cock, and under the spell of your wonderful mind.

Chapter 5

How to Attract Women

ORGONE ENERGY AND SCENT

Orgone Energy is a phrase coined by the great Austrian sex researcher Wilhelm Reich, back in the 1930s.

<http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Orgone>

Basically orgone energy is "life force produced by having an orgasm." This is related to, but contrary to, the Victorian belief that you have a limited amount of "life force" and every time you cum, you lose some. That masturbation will make you blind, harm your brain, body and soul, and even kill you.

The Victorians were wrong, and Reich was right. Sex energy is not finite, it's infinite. It doesn't harm you, it helps you. Sure, smart sport coaches tell their players "No sex the night before a big game", but this isn't because you're losing "life force." It's because coaches know that a night of good loving takes away your desire to destroy your opponent. It makes you feel at one with the world, and makes you a "lover, not a fighter." I maintain that if everyone fucked like me, there would be no war. There would be no reason to kill your fellow man. You'd be too mellow, and who wants to leave the house to destroy someone when you can stay home and fuck your hot bitch (or bitches) over and over? No one. There's a reason the US Government put saltpeter in the food of soldiers in WWII. Saltpeter makes you impotent, keeps you from fucking and masturbating, and sexual frustration makes you want to kill, which makes for a more effective fighting unit.

Wilhelm Reich did research in which he created "orgone chambers", lit-



tle rooms with special walls to trap the orgone energy. He paid young couples have lots of sex in the orgone chambers to fill them with orgone energy. Then he'd have someone with a chronic disease go sit in the chamber, and claimed he had evidence that the sick tended to feel better and get better from soaking in the accumulated invisible orgone energy.

Reich also felt that all human maladies, more or less from stubbed toes to world wars, are a direct result of sexually repressing people from a young age.

I'm not sure if I really think orgone energy can be stored in a room, but maybe it can. I *am* sure that sex energy is stored in sex smell. Living in a home full of billowing sex scent makes me more creative, more driven, makes me need less sleep, and will make me able to live to 100, even though I smoke.

My bedroom is an orgone chamber. I call it "The Internet." It's small, soundproofed, and the windows are boarded over with multiple layers of various substances. It's a sweet quiet respite from the world. I can't hear much of the hip hop out on the street from passing rich kids in their trucks, and in my room, no one can hear you scream. Except me and my podcast microphones. My room exists to be fucked in.

I don't allow Dollie to wash my sheets often. She washes them enough so they don't smell rancid (about twice a month), but we love to have them coated with dried pussy juice, my cum stains, lube stains, dried female ejaculate (more on that in Chapter Eight) and the sex sweat of the wife, me and the pet.

The wife and I once calculated that between two sheet washings (about two weeks), between the wife, me and the pet, over 1200 orgasms had occurred in that bed.

If you have a lot of sex in your bed, even if it's just beating off, your bed will smell like sex. Sit a girl who likes sex on this bed, talk to her about the weather, but **MAKE HER LAUGH**, and she'll probably end up naked. The subconscious smell will touch her in special primal places and let her open to you.

Even better if you've fucked a woman in this bed between sheet washings.

Pussy juice in your bed is an anointment. Don't rush to wash your sheets. Live with them. Love them. Love it. Luxuriate in the scent.

Same goes for your sacred body.

DON'T WEAR DEODORANTS OR ANTIPERSPIRANTS

This may be the most controversial thing you'll read here, but it's the key. It works for me, and I get more pussy than a toilet seat, so you should listen to me.

Don't wear deodorant and don't wear any antiperspirant.

Deodorant is just scent, it's a type of perfume. It hides the natural sex scent that all humans produce from their underarms.

Antiperspirant is even more evil. *It keeps you from sweating.* It kills a most basic function of physiology and homeostasis that is of paramount importance to all mammals. And humans are mammals. You're an animal. Do not deny your intrinsic animal nature. Smell like a fucking *man*, man! Not like some fruity fucking neutralized shaved ape sprayed with perfume.

Do bathe (at least five days a week), *do* use soap (unscented; I recommend Dove). But women who are attracted to men for sex and love, rather than for money, are attracted to the natural smell of a man. It's filled with pure sex pheromones (the smells that subconsciously attract mammals, and insects, to mate).

If you smell sweet, and maybe slightly of green onions, you're good to go. If you smell like pickles, it's time for a shower, you fucking pig.

Make sure you wash your clothes at least once a week. If you don't have washer and dryer at home, and don't have money to do that at a laundromat, do it in your sink, by hand. Wash your duds in warm water, with dishwashing soap or even bar soap, squeeze them out with your hands, rinse them out, and hang outside or somewhere inside with good breeze and sun to dry. I did this for years before I got my life together and started making money as a writer. There's no shame in it. You do what you gotta do.

Dollie adds: and don't use stuff like Febreze on your clothes. Then they just smell. Fake fruity *and* synthetically stinky.

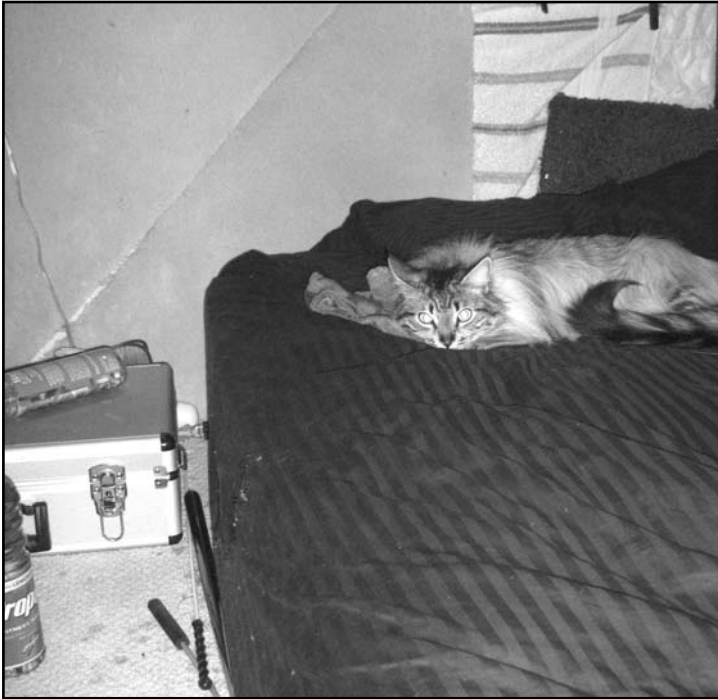
SCENT SCAMS

You can pay a lot of money for fake "pheromone cologne", but it's a scam. Those don't work. Synthetics don't work. Pheromones have to be



real, and they have to be **yours**. Don't buy that inert crap. Send me your money instead, or burn it. All three give you the same result: broke and unfucked. You're an idiot if you think you need fake crap to paint on your body. Use your God-given MAN SWEAT to attract the bitches.

Even my cats know my natural musk is tasty. When I wear a shirt for a day and toss it on the floor, if I haven't worn deodorant for a while, my cats will roll in the shirt and sniff it and play with it, for hours. And remember: women are like cats.



One of our squittens sniffing my shirt,
and guarding it jealously
(Note carpeting on the walls of my nest,
for added soundproofing and sound conditioning.)

(And while we're on the subject of "pheromone cologne" scams, forget about "male enhancement" pills. Another fucking scam, according to the FDA and a few guys I know who've tried them. Just more picking of your pockets by remote control – by playing on your fears of dying alone and unloved. If you do the things in this book, you will not die alone and unloved.)

JUST STOP!

Just stop wearing deodorant, change your shirt every other day instead of every day, stay clean otherwise, and you're golden. (Make sure you floss and brush your teeth, and brush your gums, tongue and the inside of your mouth, at least twice a day!) Women will flock to you more than they do now. And it's not the same women who flock to guys with lots of money, but *better* women. Women who love sex, and don't care about money.

You'll probably have to have a job doing manual labor or working at home to pull this off. If you work in an office or a department store, or in any kind of in-person sales, it will probably get you fired. But working in an office is boring. (I've done it, a lot. I've also dug ditches. Digging ditches was more fun.) If you have a job where you can't smell like a man, get a different job. Lots of great pussy, even from one woman, is more important and will make you happier than lots of money.

Be careful. Natural male scents not only put women into heat, they also make men angry. Stay away from type-A personality men once you stop killing your scent. These apes may pick up your scent as a challenge for territory, and act accordingly. Myself, I just avoid men in general and mostly just hang out with women. Women are better.

Also, you should probably wear antiperspirant (but not deodorant) if you're going deep into the woods anywhere there are bears or wolves or other predatory large animals. They will smell you a lot quicker if you smell like a human animal, and may also take the scent as a challenge. And their noses are a lot more fucking sensitive than Mike from Marketing's nose.

Warning: if everyone stops killing their God-given scent, society will collapse. If everyone quit wearing deodorant, everyone would stay home, fuck all the time, lose their job, and nothing would get done. Trash would pile up, food deliveries would stop, store shelves would go empty, we'd all starve. So yeah, deodorant is required for a civilized society, but who wants to be very integrated into civilized society anyway? I'm not.

I showed a draft of this chapter to my friend who works as an economist for the US Government. He said the above paragraph was his favorite part. He also said, "Dude, there are millionaires who don't live as well as you."

I said, "I thought about you while I was writing that part about



society collapsing, and I figured you'd love that paragraph. It's the economic projection of what would happen if every man fucked like a king. Kings don't get up in the morning and go to the salt mines."

Keep in mind that antiperspirants can tend to keep you from smelling like a man for several days, through several showers. If you have a job you want to keep, take your two-week vacation and stop slathering that stuff on your pits your last day before vacation. Shower daily, or even twice a day, to get that shit off of you. By day three of your vacation, you should start smelling like a man again, can cut back on the showers, and are ready to go out and reclaim your divine shaved-Yeti birthright, and attract women by smell.

Sex begets sex. Having your bed, and yourself, smelling like sex will get you laid if you're not getting laid, and get you laid *more* if you are already getting laid.

Sit with a girl on a bed that smells like sex, and the male and female pheromones will get her *into* that bed. And don't bathe after sex. The pussy smell, even if subliminal, will bring other women into your world.

Smelling like a man will help you get bitches. If you smell like a man, go to a party and just mingle. Be yourself, be confident, but not cocky. You don't need to be the alpha-male type-A asshole, just hang out. Talk girls up, stand near them, and they will find themselves intrinsically drawn to you.

Smelling like a man will also help you *keep* bitches, once you get them. Sometimes, with the wife and the pet, all I do for foreplay is say "Bitches in the bed, NOW!" They scurry their little asses in frilly slips up on either side of me. I pull the covers over us, they bury their noses in my armpits, I cuddle them and kiss their heads. Within a minute, they're both humping my legs like dogs, and then I start fucking them, one after the other, sullyng their sacred souls with my sanctified seed, back and forth, one to the other. When I'm recharging for the next fuck, they lick each other.

It's a beautiful thing. I lead a life better than many kings, and you can too. Stop wearing deodorant, be funny, be yourself, and pretty soon you'll have your own bitch or bitches doing your lovely divine bidding.

CONFIDENCE

We covered this in Chapter Three, but I'll reveal more here.

Sexy, submissive women like men who are genuinely confident, but not cocky. That's what women REALLY want...at least the women worth

fucking, and the ones worth talking to, which are the ONLY ones worth fucking.

The best thing for building confidence is to do something nice for someone else (human or animal), without expecting anything in return. Teach someone some computer skills. Volunteer at the SPCA. Seriously. Be selfless, and don't make a show of it, and you will become more confident.

HOW TO TALK TO WOMEN

Don't talk to women like they're that different from you. Talk to women like they're guys, sort of. Don't have a different persona for women than for men. Be yourself. Think of them as guys, and forget for a minute you wanna nail them to the center of the earth with your cock. If it's hard to forget this, practice by talking to women you are not attracted to, or women who are unavailable to you for some reason. Also, masturbate frequently. Then you won't be as "hungry" when you talk to women, and it can just be about what it should be about: one mind and soul connecting with another.

DON'T EVER PAY FOR SEX

Don't pay for whores, and don't go to strip clubs. That's a creepy kind of desperation in and of itself. And even with a whore, you're paying for the *illusion* of sex. The women don't like you, and they pretend to like you. That is so antithetical to everything I believe, on a cellular level even. Men with true confidence, the mellow, smart, creative ones, don't have to pay for sex. Type-A assholes pay for sex. Mike from Marketing pays for sex.

Rollins said it well. He has a spoken word thing where he basically says that men in our culture who pay for sex would have been the men in primitive society who would have had to stay back with the women pounding corn while the real men were out slaying beasts to feed the tribe.

I'm no fucking corn pounder.

PUSSY BEGETS PUSSY

Desperation, especially sexual desperation, is a huge turn-off to women.

If you're desperate, fuck ANYONE to get the smell of desperation off you and make you start smelling like sex. Remember: PUSSY BEGETS



PUSSY.

When you don't get laid for a while, it gets harder and harder to get some. Women smell desperation like dogs smell fear. To break this, fuck the girl none of the other guys are after. Let the "players" negotiate the skinny model bitches at the party, the bitches who will probably ruin their lives and end up owning half their shit. You go for the girl sitting alone at the party looking like she wishes someone would come over and talk to her.

Go for the fat girl at the party. Or the plain looking girl. Or the lonely girl. Or the girl who's all three. She's probably way cooler than that blank bimbo clotheshorse willful skinny bitch that Mike from Marketing is trying to "score" with, anyway.

Chat up this lonely girl at the party. Or at the park. Or in your advanced C++ programming class. Chat her up, and connect with her soul, *for real*. Then take her home, be sweet to her. Not as an act, but for real. Then fuck her really well. Treat her like the slutty goddess she is inside, and bring that out. Make her not only feel pretty, but make her *be* pretty. Fuck her all night long, and call her the next day at work and tell her how fun it was. And mean it.

Not only are you making one of God's sisters happy, but they're usually really appreciative and dirty in bed. Most important, you will stop smelling like desperation and start smelling like sex. And if she ends up liking you and you end up attracting other women from your newfound smell and confidence, don't pick between them. Fuck them both, in the same bed at the same time. Start building your harem and living like a king in your own apartment.

I done gone without gettin' any fifi for a while before, and it gets harder each day because you're further and further away from the last time you made a woman into a goddess in your bed. But pussy begets pussy. When it rains, I drown. And I love it.

You can too.

A friend of a friend of mine said it well: "You'll start getting laid when you stop looking to get laid."

BE FUNNY AND BE EXCELLENT

Remember *The Tao of Steve* if only for the "be excellent in her presence" part. This means be really really good at something, and let her see it. Not in a "check this out, I'm so cool" way, but have occasion to show her the things you're amazing at, whether that's telling jokes, organizing spreadsheets, wrestling bears, doing ballet, or playing guitar

in an angry nu-metal band. Women love excellence, because their DNA tells them "This man has skills that would pass on to my offspring. He would make a fitting mate."

Speaking of jokes, if you're naturally funny, you definitely have an advantage. Humor is one of the most important skills a human can have. All humor is basically directed, in some way, at death. All humans know they're going to die, and most of them are, at least secretly, terrified of this. Humor laughs at death, puts it into perspective, and makes us feel a little better about the one thing we're truly powerless over in this life.

A fat slob who makes everyone laugh, is selfless, confident, but not cocky, has a much better chance at a great sex life than that skinny fuck Mike from Marketing in his fancy suits and expensive car.

"Advertising has us chasing cars and clothes, working jobs we hate so we can buy shit we don't need."

—*Fight Club*

PUSSY BEGETS PUSSY (2)

This time I mean pussy, as in cat.

If you are a caring person, and have time, get a cat. Women dig cats. Don't get a cat just as a prop to attract women, get a cat because you love cats, and because having and caring for a cat will make you a better person, which will make you more attractive to cool women. Celebrate the Healing Power of Cats!

There is no better pussy magnet than cats. But you shouldn't have cats unless you love cats. And having cats will change you in ways you can't imagine, all for the better. Cats are mythical beasts incarnate. They will teach you their ways. And cats are much like women. And if cats like you, women like you, even if they don't know you have cats. But when women do see that you *do* have cats, they'll like you even more.

I used to be a volunteer kitty foster parent for the SPCA when I lived in San Francisco. I'd get a kitten or two or three and take them home and love them and socialize them for a month or two, bring them back, and get new ones. (It's easier if you don't name them. I called them all "kitty.") In two years I had over 50 kittens in my home, a few at a time. Socializing them makes them adoptable. If you don't do it, they become mean and no one takes them and they get put to sleep. Contact your local SPCA if you want to do this. You'll have to take a



two-hour class on kitty care, and have to be willing to bring the squit-tens in immediately if they get sick, and it's all totally worth it.

Also, loving and caring for an animal is good practice for being in a relationship with a human. You have to love them all through thick and through thin.

Volunteer. Do things to be a better man. Stay out of parties, hone yourself, devote yourself to being a fucker of women like a sex monk, a martial artist, devote all to it. There is no finer life that I know of.

Women are not deer to stalk and kill (figuratively and literally). It's not a chase. It's a *dance*.

Women love this dance. They need you, and you want them. It's natural. Don't buy into anyone (religious types, Republicans, the man-hating variety of feminists, etc.) who says otherwise. You were put on this earth to fuck women, and to be kind to them, and to make them cum and scream, and you were put on this earth to help all types of humans, and all types of animals. A-men. A-mew.

THE NEST

When you bring a girl to your home, you want it nice. That doesn't mean immaculate, and that doesn't mean filled with tasteful items that cost money. It basically means that it should be a nest. A perfect little respite from the world. An embryonic chamber of comfort to make her want to be there forever, and to turn herself over to you, the king of that castle.

Oh yeah, and while it can smell like sex, it shouldn't smell like rotting garbage or cat shit. So get that shit out of your house daily, or you'll never find a woman willing to do it for you.

Your home should be filled with *nestables* - things to make you, and her, comfortable, and your home should reflect you. Nestables include everything from your bed to your snacks to some good audio or video media to enjoy with her.

My bedroom is all me. It's within the house that is mine and my wife's, the house looks like both of our personalities, but I've basically built a studio apartment within one room. I didn't even notice that until I'd lived here a year and the wife pointed it out with a giggle. I guess I spent so many years living in clean small rat dens that once I moved in with her, I made my own comfy rat den within her house. She loves it in my room. She loves to be among the Daddy things, immersed in the

Daddy world.

Have a good mattress. Have enough pillows to prop two or three people up for anything. Have decent sheets (high thread count, and not scratchy. No polyester! Cotton rules!) If you're going to make fucking a large part of your life, your bed should invite long sessions of living on it.

Don't have a TV in your bedroom. TVs kill romance, and they kill relationships. Get rid of your TV. If you need to watch something, watch it on DVD or download on your computer. (I recommend BitTorrent, and for tracker sites, I recommend www.ThePirateBay.org and www.greyloodge.org/gpc/ who not only have almost every movie every made between them, they also helped me release and spread this book to the world for free.)

Have some snacks. Women who love sex love snacks. And have slips and pumps in a few sizes, for dressing your bitches up if they didn't bring anything to wear in bed on the first date. You can have a few pairs of pumps too. If they're too big for her, that's OK. Most women feel sexy in pumps that are too big. Reminds them of that distant memory when they first tried on momma's shoes as a little girl.

In addition to keeping a few slips and pumps, keep lipstick, vibrators, lube (more on all that in Chapter Six), enema supplies and something to paddle her ass with. If you can't afford all this, or can't afford fancy ass-slappers and such, just have the lube, a cheap slip and maybe a ping pong paddle to spank her with.

You don't *have* to buy women lingerie as gifts. Every woman in the world has a slip and a pair of pumps in her closet that she's always dreamt of wearing for a man. That, some cheap pantyhose, a willing bitch, and some lipstick is all you need.

(I'll explain in Chapter Seven how to carefully and safely cut a fuck hole out of the crotch of pantyhose, while the girl is wearing them. It's a fun power exchange.)

If a woman balks at being dressed up in stuff you keep in a box by your bed for any woman who comes by, you might be with the wrong woman. Or you may have to fuck her without all the clothes the first time. Hell, take one for the team and fuck her naked, not in sex slave clothes, the first time. Once you fuck her magnificently, once you own her ass from fucking her so majestically, she'll do and wear whatever you tell her to.



BIRTH CONTROL

If you want to attract women, it's important that you do not have a "find 'em, feel 'em, fuck 'em and forget 'em" attitude, particularly with regard to procreation. Any man who gets a bitch knocked up and leaves is a scumbag.

It's your duty as a man not to impregnate any women who don't want it, and who you won't be there to help take care of the kid, through adulthood, financially and as a MAN who steps up to the plate and cares for the kid.

It's probably also your duty as a citizen of the Planet Earth to not have ANY kids, and to get a vasectomy, NOW. The world population has doubled in my lifetime, from 3 billion people to over 6 billion people. (I'm 44, born in 1964.) At the current rate of growth, it will be nearly ten billion people by 2050, when I'll be very old. You're probably younger than me, and will probably live past when I die. Do you really want to live in a world with 10 billion selfish screaming people who all want to take what you have? When the gasoline runs out, when the temperature rises and seas rise from global warming, and land starts to disappear, and droughts make food and water and livable land scarce. People carjack now. In 20 years, people will *housejack*. People will kill you for clean water. For food. For anything. Do you really want to bring a kid into that? And do you want to *contribute* to that by having a kid?

"But I WANT a kid" I hear some of you saying. Well, you're selfish. Don't have kids. The world is destroying itself. (And the Catholic Church is responsible for much of it. They encourage overpopulation, and don't encourage birth control.) The world has outpaced its ability to sustain and provide for itself. The world is becoming a deadbeat dad.

And a lot of people, especially religious people, are against abortion. I'm all for it. As a wise man once said, "Sure, abortion is murder. But it's self-defense."

But you shouldn't look at abortion as a birth control option. Look at it as a last resort, like if the rubber breaks and she gets pregnant. And discuss kids ahead of time. I'd not recommend sleeping with women who want them, with women who might not have an abortion if, despite all precautions, they get pregnant.

Get fixed. You can get it done free at Planned Parenthood. Though you'll have to wade through seas of stupid Christians with protest signs. It's worth it. And of course, the law requires that to get fixed, you have to come back three times, to make sure you're serious about it, while any fool can have a kid. Getting a vasectomy requires a waiting period, like buying a gun. Hell, I think there should be a waiting period to have

a kid, and vasectomies should be given away with no waiting at booths on street corners. In India, they used to give a radio away to anyone who'd get fixed. They need to do that here. Maybe they could use iPods. (And fill them with me and the wife's "SUBMISSION AND COFFEE" BDSM podcast: www.askdollie.com)

Women are attracted to men who care about birth control, so be ready to care. If you won't get fixed, use condoms, practice on your own until you get good at using them. Beat off with lube and porn, wearing a condom. Put a little lube INSIDE the condom. It takes some work, but you can have incredibly hot sex while wearing a condom.

LATEX ALLERGIES

Most condoms are made of latex. A small percentage of people are allergic to any contact with latex. This can be, in rare cases, fatal.

If you or your partner break out when touching latex condoms or gloves, there are alternatives. For non-latex gloves (for fisting and medical play, covered in Chapter Eight), you can get a box of 50 latex-free powdered vinyl disposable gloves at CVS or other drug stores for about six bucks. As for condoms:

(from yourtotalhealth.com):

"Trojan Naturalamb" is a lamb intestine natural membrane type of condom. It is not generally as effective as latex condoms. Also, they do not protect the couple from HIV or from sexually transmitted infections.

"Avanti" and "Trojan Supra" are polyurethane condoms.

The "Avanti" condom has many advantages over those made of latex: Avanti is at least twice as thin and strong as latex condoms. It is nonporous and non-permeable to all viruses, including HIV. It is safe for use with oil-based lubricants and is hypoallergenic. This condom has been improved over the years and is now only available in a SuperThin style.

The "Trojan Supra" is made from a highly advanced formula called Microsheer. It is ultra-thin, soft and hypoallergenic. It has no taste or smell. The "Trojan Supra" can be used with oil-based lubricants. It is practically invisible when placed on the erect penis. The "Trojan Supra" is only available with spermicide at this time.

The desire to procreate is societal *and* innate but we've evolved beyond what world population allows. Fuck the blank food tubes and their need



to create a carbon copy blob of themselves. It's selfish, and it's *killing our planet*.

At this point in history, having kids is a crime against nature. Don't be selfish. Don't kill my planet. And if you think I'm wrong, keep that in mind. Remember it in 30 years when you're outside the gates of my ranch baking of dehydration, begging for just one sip from my massive storage tanks of clean water. Women in camouflage slips will be standing on the roof of the compound with sniper rifles and crossbows, defending me and my water.

Overpopulation is not just the decline of western civilization, it's the end of the world as we know it.

WHAT TO DO ON A FIRST DATE

"Make her laugh. Make her smile. Be excellent. Then scare the hell out of her."

That used to be the formulae, back in quainter times. Take her to a scary movie, and when she screams because the guy in a cheesy monster suit jumps out in reel one, you hug her and reassure her. By reel three, you'd be to "first base."

Well, we're in more complex times now. The movie monster is real, the new monster movie is the Evening News. Or if you want more honest monster reports, watch science shows about pollution, global warming, pandemics, overpopulation, and other disasters.

Discuss the fact that the world is coming to an end and "WE'RE ALL GONNA DIE!" Smart chicks will be loosened up by this, and forget some of their societally implanted bullshit sexual "morals." Hell, it works for me. We're all gonna be dead or wish we were dead in 40 years the way global warming is going, so why not make the best of the last few million moments on earth before the coastlines are flooded and the heartland turns to dust?

Watch science shows and actual documentaries about how we're all gonna die. I recommend the History Channel and National Geographic Channel, my favorite two channels. (I love science shows, and girls who love them usually love sex too, for some reason.)

Don't watch some bullshit Hollywood movie on your first date, even if it's about how "WE'RE ALL GONNA DIE!" because if it is, in the third reel, some scientist will rush in, type furiously at the keyboard, and fix everything and save everyone.

Everyone watches a movie on a first date. Have your date listen to our podcast with you instead. It'll either drive her out, or drive her into your bed.

Regarding our podcast: "SUBMISSION AND COFFEE." BDSM podcast from a happily married couple.

Free. No iPod needed: www.AskDollie.com

And as we say, "Come for the sex, but stay for the talk." The episodes, or "lessons" as we like to call them, are filled with a lot of cool yacking, with tips on everything from how to make a woman cum to how to care for your cats, to how to keep people from stealing the registration stickers off your car, to even more than I had time to give you in this book on *the actual secret to life*. And smart, sexy chicks love our podcast. (Read the testimonials from many many smart, sexy chicks at ThornDaddy.com and AskDollie.com). On the podcast, we actually have sex, and talk a lot about sex, but we also talk about other things, too. Because there's more to life than sex. We speak about the good life on the planet earth, and thinking beyond spinners and bling.

You need to be a globally aware citizen to be worthy of fucking. You have to think beyond *yourself*.

BUT WHAT CAN I DO? I'M JUST ONE MAN!

Get fixed. Don't have kids. Recycle. Conserve water (by bathing less often, which attracts women, but also by not running the water for ten minutes to just brush your teeth and shave. Turn it on and off as you need it, you lazy fuck! Also, you don't need to flush every time you just pee. Seriously.) Don't drive a fucking SUV, and don't buy spinners. They're for small-dick pussy men who like to be told what to do by grinning idiots on TV. Throw away your TV and buy more computer memory. Get your priorities straight. TVs waste power, and rot your brain. A new good green-rated computer uses less power and can educate you, instead of making you stupid like TV does. And don't support advertisers by watching TV. Download shows and movies you like on BitTorrent. They usually have the ads edited out. Get movies there too. Destroy the bullshit beast of Hollywood, marketing, fashion, and all those other lies, by simply not paying attention to them.

If you have the money for a fancy car, don't use it to attract evil skinny golddigging women. Buy a smaller sensible car or a hybrid, and use the extra money to buy a little land out in the country. Put a fence around it. You'll need it in a few years. To keep you and your bitches safe(er) from the housejackers and water war looting.



Clothes don't make the man. Clothes hide the man. They often hide the fact that there's no man to even hide. Don't buy into the fashion industry that says you have to spend a lot of money on clothes. Men don't need to, and women don't need to. Look nice, be creative, but don't buy the lie of things going quickly out of fashion, and don't spend a lot of money on it. You're being lied to. That industry is run by the same types of people who tell women they have to be unhealthily skinny or they'll never get a man. In fact, fashion folk perpetrate that myth by using models who look like skeletons.

It's interesting that the fashion industry is run by gay men. Why should gay men determine what makes a woman attractive to a man and a man attractive to a woman? This makes about as much sense as the Pope, a celibate old man, telling people how to have sex. I like manly fags and sissy fags, but I hate metrosexuals and hate fags who dress metrosexual. It's all so damn *civilized*. It's denying the fact that we're primal fucking animals. ALL MARKETING IS A LIE. It's all just picking pockets by remote control.

And besides, the chix that will fuck your brains out AND not make you crazy aren't attracted by off-the-shelf fashion spinners and bling and bullshit and overcompensating cars. They're attracted by men who care about the world. Not men who pretend to care, but men who *truly* care.

I dress like a 15-year-old-skater-boy, and have since I *was* a 15-year-old-skater-boy. Actually, most 15-year-old-skater-boys dress better. I'm kind of a slob, and have holes in my T-shirts from wearing them until they become comfortable and beyond.

So, to attract women, here ya go. Here's the Tao of ThornDaddy: throw away your Speed Stick, work on self-improvement, volunteer, make your home into your castle, get a vasectomy, get a cat, get confident, help others, and give a shit about the world. Seriously.

All this works for me, and has always worked for me. It'll work for you, too.

CHAPTER 6

How to Fuck a Woman's Brains Out – Let's Jump Right In....

DESERVING A SEX SLAVE

Some men are meant for being dominant in the bed. Some aren't. This book will be most effective with men who are, or at least have tendencies toward that.

Most of how things go in the bed is really up to you. Sure, female dominant / male submissive sex can be great (or so I hear from people who are into that sort of thing), but I have no interest in it. Some of my friends are male subs and some are female doms (dommes), but that's not my world, so I can't really speak to it.

And yes, we have evolved beyond the hunter/gatherer survival instinct with our modern society, but we're still wired a certain way. In primitive society the man had to hunt and the woman had to take care of the offspring in order to survive, and now that's hard wired into our DNA. It may be evolving out of us, and maybe in 10,000 years society will be ruled by women. I don't know, and I'll be long dead by then. But maybe this manuscript will still exist in some digital form, being read in caves on solar-powered iPod screens.

I hope so.

Anyway, in my world, woman on the bottom, man on the top, "taking" the woman with permission, works best. I'm an elegant, educated caveman (with an I.Q. of 143). And in my mind, a man driving in bed, a man leading, just makes sense.

A female virgin can be a good lay, if the man is directing. A male virgin will only disappoint an experienced woman. I know...the first time I had sex, I just laid there. Then I met an older biker chick, she taught me a few things, and I quickly and intuitively "got" it and became a masterful fucker. That's probably the last time I let a woman direct, but I'm still glad she did. And we're still friends, 27 years later.



Basically, to be able to be in charge of another human being, you have to have your own shit together. Being dominant, in or out of the bed, is not for the fucked up. If you're fucked up, keep reading, but I'd recommend not trying too much of this until your life is in shape. Only you can determine what that means, but if you're honest with yourself, you'll know.

I've come to a place in my life where I am a good person to lead the life of another. I lead my wife's life, in and out of the bed. I lead the pet's life in our bed, and advise (but don't lead) her outside the bed. I mentor the pet, but don't control her. But my wife, I control outside the bed. I tell her when to go to sleep, when to write and proofread for me, when we're going to podcast, when and how we're going to fuck, etc. So I control the lives of 2 ½ people. Me, my wife, and part of the life of the pet. And that's about all I can control. I avoid the rest of the world, avoid confrontation, and have no interest in sparring with people. I do the judo thing and step out of the world's way. I work at home, I don't have a boss, I can get up when I want, sleep when I want, smell like I want. It's nice, and it took a lot of work. If you're interested, I've written about a half-dozen books under my real name that can help you do that.

Remember, the women you fuck need to be the same species as you. At least 80% of the world isn't. Sluts are not your species. Sluts are not the goal. Submissives will make you much happier. Sluts are out for themselves. They'll act a little submissive, but only so you'll do what they tell you to, to pleasure them. Submissives will serve you, to make you happy. And when you use subs for your pleasure, don't try too hard, you will pleasure them more than you can ever imagine possible.

CONSENT, CONSENT, CONSENT, CONSENT

You don't need booze or drugs to get laid. If you do, you're a punk and this ain't for you. Sex is far better when you're sober. Consensual booze and drug seduction is a cheap trick. It's like hitting a home run on steroids. It doesn't count.

And unwitting drug seduction (like slipping her a roofie) is rape. So is fucking a girl who happens to pass out drunk at the party. Rapists should be ground into cat food. All sex must be consensual. Always.

THE SACRED **SAFWORD**

First thing you need to know about consensual rough sex is the concept of the **SAFWORD**. This is a word that you and your lover decide upon ahead of time, and when the submissive (the woman, in this case), blurts out that word, you STOP whatever you're doing.



Safewords only work if you have absolute respect for them and honor the safeword EVERY TIME. When the woman "safewords out", you STOP, untie her, pet her if she's into it, give her space if she needs it, and let her talk about it. You don't talk her INTO doing whatever was bothering her. You don't get snitty, you just wait patiently until she's ready to do something else sexually, or let her stop the sex entirely if that's what she wants. Or needs.

There are some sick and twisted men who think that, as a dominant, they do not have to respect women's safewords and boundaries. This is absolutely antithetical to the only rule in great sex: "EVERYTHING MUST BE SAFE, SANE AND CONSENSUAL."

If you're a woman reading this: ANY MAN WHO SAYS YOU DO NOT NEED A SAFEWORD, OR THAT HE DOESN'T NEED TO HONOR YOUR SAFEWORD, IS A PREDATOR AND YOU SHOULD **RUN** FROM HIM AND NEVER LOOK BACK.

A good safeword is a word one wouldn't normally utter in sex otherwise, something like "STRAWBERRY!" Others use "yellow" for "slow down" and "RED!" for STOP!

Of course, you could just use "STOP!" as the safeword, but then that negates consensual rape play (covered in the Chapter Eight) where saying "NO NO NO NO!" might actually be part of the play.

Discuss "safewording out of a scene" ahead of time, let her pick her safeword (or pick one for her), and HONOR IT, EVERY TIME!

OK, we've got that out of the way. Now you're ready for the basics of great sex, in my world. (Which would probably be advanced sex for a lot of vanilla people.)

IF SHE WANTS TO BE IN CONTROL

If the woman wants to be in control, and you're not into that, get another woman. There's nothing wrong with a man being controlled by a woman, if it's safe, sane and consensual. But if it's not for you, you can't be "trained" to like it. Many women, even vanilla women, try to do this, and it invariably ends in both parties being miserable.

POSITIONS

My favorite sexual position is missionary style, i.e. woman on bottom,



legs spread, me on top. You might think it's very unadventurous to have this most "vanilla" position as my fave. But I can do so much within this basic position, that it's amazing.

I like this position a lot. I can see the subtle changes in the woman's face as I fuck her. I can kiss her and nibble her earlobes. I can push my armpit into her face and make her sniff it (which makes her immediately cum). I can grab onto her sides, her tits, her pubic mound, legs, etc. She loves all of this. I love watching her, I love petting her, I love the sacredness of me facing her while I fuck her silly.

The exact position I usually use is her on her back, facing me on top, fucking her missionary style with her feet up, knees bent, and she's holding onto the underside of her legs. When I'm fucking her missionary style, I either have her hands holding her legs up for me from the underside of her thighs, or legs up with her hands at her sides. This second one is delicious because she can't touch me or do anything to me, I'm in complete control. Sometimes if she gets lost in the moment and tries to kiss me, I'll say in a loud, commanding voice "HANDS AT YOUR SIDES!" and she'll immediately revert to that.

If you've trained her well, and she's the right woman for you, she'll love all this.

You should always command your subs in a clear voice. Whisper if you like, but don't mumble. It comes off as less than dominant, and doesn't engender the right frame of mind in the sub for taking orders.

Missionary position with her feet are up, pointing her pumps at my shoulders, with her holding onto the underside of her ankles rocks. I love it, so do the wife and the pet. It maximizes ability to just pet her pretties, part her petals, and nail her to the center of the earth with my cock until she squirts stars and secrets onto the majesty of my bed.

There are a million ways to make love to a woman. I only know how I do it. I'll teach you that, and you can try it all, see what works with what woman, and adopt it to create your own brilliant style.

DIFFERENT STROKES FOR DIFFERENT FOLKS

Charles Bukowski said something like "All women are exactly the same, and just different enough to drive us nuts!"

I really disagree, at least as to how they are outside of bed. Back when I used to go to bed with people I wouldn't now go to lunch with, I fucked a lot of damaged beauties. They were very similar in the bed, but some made my life much worse outside the bed, while others made

my life much better outside the bed. (I'm only interested in the latter these days.)

But surprisingly, I've found that if I "drive", i.e. if I take control, IN BED, almost all the women I've slept with are surprisingly similar in what they like in bed. 95% of the women I've slept with are fairly orgasmic, like to be spanked while fucked, like to be called dirty sluts, and are willing to put on a slip, lipstick and pumps when I tell them to. This is true of sexually experienced women, but also of some very "vanilla" women I've "turned out", i.e. turned into sluts just for me in my bed. I've fucked a few recently divorced women who had normal jobs, didn't like rock music, had only had a few sex partners in their life, and were otherwise very "normal" and made them into wanton sluts in my bed from the first kiss.

I think it's largely about picking the right women. The women who are attracted to the smell of a man who doesn't sully his natural pheromones with deodorant and cologne, those women are ready for anything, if you are sweet, strong in bed, and respectful as you slut them around with love.

You have to be a decent guy too. Most people think they're decent. But are you? I hope you are. (Remember my warning about the skinny bitch with the cats waiting for you in your future.)

SPREAD HER SOUL AND SHAKE OUT HER SECRETS

So basically, I have found the women who are attracted to me to be very much the same in bed, in a very beautiful way. Whether they're tattooed rocker chicks who live in some bar and pick up and fuck a guy in a different touring band every night, or if they're plump secretaries with many cats who haven't been laid well ever, and haven't been laid at all in a few years, I can turn them into moaning slutty little dolls for my pleasure in bed, within a few minutes, once they've said "Yes." And they all love the ride.

I basically do the same things with all of them, but with a million little variations. And it's not a "script." It's not a "game." It's a SACRED FUCKING PRAYER WITH MY SISTERS, ME CONNECTING WITH THEIR MOST BASIC PRIMAL LEVEL. IT'S ME BONDING WITH THEM IN AN ATOMIC WAY, EVEN IF THEY NEVER COME BACK.

There's an Eddy Murphy skit that I love, an old classic standup thing where he says basically that "Once you make a woman cum REALLY HARD, make her yell 'OOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOooooooooooooo!' in bed, something changes."



The best comedy is based on truth, and Murphy was right: Something DOES change at that point. Basically, once you cock that SOUL SPOT inside a woman, you OWN her. And then, you can keep her around forever, if you so choose, and if you're a decent man.

You may wonder why I keep going on about "being a decent guy." Well, I wasn't always one, but now I am. I used to be verbally abusive to women. And to men. To everyone. I was an unhappy young man, in a lot of ways. I've weaned all of this out of me with a lot of reflection and hard work, and the Universe is rewarding me in ways I couldn't previously imagine, in everything from sex and love, to my career, to just my general ongoing state of happiness.

My wife loves to read complex 900-page kinky sci-fi romance sex novels. One of them had a line that I loved. I don't recall the book or the author, but it was something to the effect of "Women don't just need to be fucked by a hard cock, they need to love the thing that the hard cock's attached to. If it was just about being fucked over and over, hell, they have *machines* for that."

I'm not trying to teach you how to "take advantage" of this need in women, my eager young student of fuck. I'm trying to teach you how to LOVE this need in women, to feed it, to complete it, to have it complete you...*to swim in it and never leave*. THAT my friend, is the secret to having a sex slave that will make your life perfect.

But you can't look for a woman to fix you if you're broken. You have to fix yourself first, then and only then will this woman appear. And she will appear when, and only when, you're fixed enough to treat her really really well.

MY "NON-SCRIPT"

You can do anything you want with a woman in bed, if there's mutual respect, the safeword is honored, and you talk about lines not to cross ahead of time. I recommend doing one good basic vanilla (but spirited) fuck to "get her", then discuss what will work and what doesn't, then GO FOR IT. Take control.

Different submissive women tend to all like the same stuff that I do in bed, but a few have boundaries particular to them, and it's your duty to know these boundaries.

I had a girlfriend who wanted to give me head, but couldn't, because she'd been repeatedly orally raped by a neighbor man when she was a kid. She was so damaged by this that she'd tried to cut her tongue out



with a knife, and had permanent scars on her tongue. Some men deserve to be ground into cat food. But I respected this boundary, and never asked her for a blow job. Many women have one or two things that are "hard limits" for them, and you should discuss ahead of time before really "going to town on her."

But basically, here's what I do with all women, unless they safeword out, and unless a pre-discussed hard limit is on this list.

I ask the woman what she wants her safeword to be. Or if she doesn't know, I lovingly explain it to her, and assign a safeword to her. I get the woman into bed, dressed in a slip, pumps, lipstick, and sometimes perfume and stockings. I dim the lights. (Just the light from a computer monitor is usually a perfect mood for great sex.)

I don't put music on, unless it's music with me singing, because music gets me out of my head. I want to be 100% here for this. I like to stay in the little bubble of love between me and the woman, that extends about a foot in each direction. Music tends to pop that bubble.

And you *don't* need "make out music" to get laid. That shit is for Mike from Marketing, not for a brilliant beast like you.

I pet the hell out of her, kiss her all over. If she's ready, willing and able to be tied up, I put special leather wrist cuffs on her wrists (these and a lot of other fun toys are available from StockRoom.com), then lash them to the bar over the top of my bed with carabiner (available from Home Depot). Once her hands are out of the way, I start. If she's not yet willing to trust me enough to be lashed, and I do understand this on a first or second or even third date, I just say "Hands at your sides." This is called "mental bondage" – where the woman behaves as if she's tied up without really being tied up.

There are any number of things that I might do in a session with a woman. I will cover many of my hundreds of variations in Chapters Seven and Eight. But I'll run you through the basics here.

I keep petting her, and speak in a low, natural and commanding voice. (Women are attracted to a great voice. If you don't have one, you're at a disadvantage, but if everything else about you, about the "whole package" as I've described it throughout this book, is in place, you're still golden.) I speak to my bitch to reassure her, to soothe her mind, and to bring her more under my spell. This is not a trick, and it is not any type of "hypnosis." It's just one soul taking charge gently and realistically of another, with permission, and soothing my mind and body



into hers.

I'll tell her she's safe. This isn't a lie, as she is safe. I'm not going to take her anywhere she's not ready to go, not going to do anything she doesn't want me to do.

I tell her she's a dirty, sweet little whore, made for the pleasure of men. This is true, and I do stress the "sweet" part. I'm honored that this slut is parting her pretties for me, and I'll be good to them, and good to her.

I nibble on her nape, hunching over the woman's body with mine a few inches above hers. I'll pull her hair, very gently, while gauging how hard or how soft she likes everything. I'll kiss around her ear, suck her lobes and whisper more about how she's a dirty little girl, and how I'm here to celebrate her by nailing her to the center of the earth with my cock. I don't yet touch or go near her pussy. It's all about stimulating her sacred mind at this point.

I alternate all my movements, speaking and touching between soft and hard. Subs tend to really love this. I pet her sweetly, then when she's sufficiently warmed up, I slap her ass with my hand to gauge what she likes.

With any impact play like spanking, or hitting the ass or tits with a thin cane, you need to warm up. You can't just smack a chick who's not opening up sexually, or it will hurt, scare her, and make her run out of your house. And even though she is open to it, and even if she's *not* inexperienced, you need to start light, and work up. Because after a little bit of light impact play, not only do women into that get more turned on, but their body starts releasing endorphins into the blood. Endorphins make you feel happy, naturally high, warm, loved and they make pain not feel like pain. If you start with some light spanking, and spank in the exact same place, the cumulative effect can be delightful. Spank her about 100 times on one ass cheek, without using the full strength of your hand (you may have to alternate hands if you're not used to this). Then switch to the other side, then pin her shoulders down with your hands and kiss the hell out of her. She'll probably fucking love it.

It's good for a sub to avoid coffee and soda before any pain play. Caffeine lowers your pain threshold. You are not trying to inflict pain, you are inflicting pleasure with acts that would be painful under different circumstances.

I'm now probably 20 or 30 minutes into all of the play, and still haven't come near her pussy. It's probably screaming to be fucked, but I'll



make her wait. Some masters are into orgasm control, they'll make their bitches go several days without cumming, to increase power exchange and control, and also to make the orgasm more delicious once it happens. I'm not into orgasm control on such a long timeline. I like my bitches to cum as many times as possible every day I'm with them. But I will make them wait a little bit sometimes, especially the first time.

Keep kissing her, gently pulling her hair, and kneading her body. Lay on top of her and kiss her on the lips, deeply, and reach under and give her a backrub.

Plump girls hold a lot of tension in the little knob of flesh at the top of their spine. Don't forget to give this part extra attention.

I keep playing with her body, calling her sweet dirty names and saying sweet dirty things to her. If she ever safewords out, I STOP IMMEDIATELY AND UNTIE HER. But if she doesn't, I experiment with what she likes, with what I like, and play her body like a sacred instrument.

Once her body and words are telling me to fuck her, I'll make her beg a little, especially the first time. And then play with her pussy, but not fuck her, for about 20 more minutes. Then I'll finally slid into her with my cock, look her into her eyes, and fuck her like it's the last thing I'll ever do. I cum in her, and it doesn't end there. In most male-dominated vanilla hardcore porn, and most male-dominated vanilla sex, it's over when the man cums. But with me, it's just beginning.

Once she's cum a few times, and I've cum once, I pet her and hold her and kiss her, in a world of sweet aftercare. After a few minutes of that, I'll start playing with her pussy again. My goal is to keep her "hot" for hours. That's how you come to *own* a woman.

Once she's begging me to fuck her again, I'll roll her panties to one side. Holding her legs open by clutching her ankles or pushing on her inner thigh, I lick her pussy a lot. This is where you *should* slurp like you're eating an apple. Or more like licking an ice cream cone on a hot day. Lick the hell outta that thing! Don't worry too much about "Do I lick the clit (clitoris), or do I lick the inner lips? Lick it ALL. And suck the pussy, all over, inside and out. Be sloppy. Most women like it all. And nibble and lick her inner thigh, and play with her asshole.

Now I'm ready to fuck her. I'm rock hard, she's wet as hell, she's splayed and open before me like a good book (or like THE Good Book!) I pull her panties off, and either put them on one of her ankles (for that helpless look), or stuff them in her mouth. Then I slide my cock inside.



I grab her tits, or belly, or sides, and just fuck. That's it. Just fucking fuck her. Nail her to the center of the earth with your cock. Answer your internal biological command to stuff her full of semen, over and over, as much as you can.

Go for the "spot." Once she's cumming, or about to cum, slam your cock into her over and over as hard as you can. Picture a "spot" beyond her on the bed. Try to slam *through* her to that spot.

Alternate between soft and hard fucking, and hard and soft petting all over her body. See what works for her. Pull her hair a little, listen to her body, listen to what her purr-squeaks and cries and moans tell you. Let them guide you. Fuck her with the caveman programming that every cell in your body, every cell in her body, has. Use her for your pleasure. Don't worry if she cums. Don't even think about it. Just pleasure her by pleasuring yourself. Cum into her like it's the end of the world and it's the last one you'll ever get.

Lay there being at one with the Universe with her.

Rinse and repeat. Rinse and repeat. Rinse and repeat. Rinse and repeat as desired.

AFTERCARE

Aftercare is loving and petting and kissing and hugging your bitch after you fuck her. We also call it "after cat", because with us (Dollie and me, and also Dollie, me and the pet), it often includes sweet, quiet meowing and kitty noises.

Aftercare is essential. You gotta do it. It will not only keep a woman coming back, it is a very important *part* of fucking a woman's brains out. Do it do it do it do it! (And also, you'll probably just end up ready to fuck again after a bit of aftercat, and women love this!)

Stretch and warm up and warm down, especially if you're over 30. Extreme sex (even with love) is a physical exercise and you can strain a muscle.

I can still satisfy two women at once, but if I don't warm up, my back hurts the next day.

And stay hydrated, especially with two girls, and be sure your bitches drink water if they forget in the flurry of sex. Especially if they're squirters (more on that in Chapter Eight). And keep yummy snacks on hand to munch between fuckings.

HOW TO KISS

Kiss like a fucking MAN, not like a boy.

One reason younger women tend to date older guys, other than that older guys are more mature emotionally, more stable in their lives, less fucked up, and better in bed, is that older guys are usually better kissers. Kissing is unbelievably fucking important to a woman. This fact cannot be understated.

Inexperienced kissers (most teenage boys) kiss like they're eating an apple. They lunge at the girl's face with their face, cram their tongue down her throat, and try lick her tonsils. Not sexy.

Experienced kissers (men) kiss differently. I'm a great kisser. But I'm so "in the moment" when I do it, that I had to ask my wife "Hey honey. Describe what a good kisser does." Here's what she said:

"Be aggressive without being assaultive. Don't just latch on and never leave. Be aware that there's an actual human attached to those lips you're kissing, and look for signals of what works. Different women like different things. Kiss her soft, kiss her hard, do both, back and forth, in a natural way.

"Nibble her lips, gently or not, depending on her reactions. It should be give and take, it's not an attack. Take charge, but remember: it's an exchange. Let her kiss you back, and respond to how she kisses you.

"Breathe. Inexperienced men forget to breathe when kissing, then gasp, like they're coming up for air.

"You don't only have to kiss her mouth. Go from her mouth to her ears, to her neck, nibble her neck, and come back to kissing her lips. Bite her if she's into it. Many are.

"Kissing can be done with eyes open, or eyes closed. Do either, do both, do what feels right.

"Becoming a great kisser takes practice. But if you remember it's give and take, you'll be a lot better from the start."



Kiss her well, and kiss her often. In bed and out. Grab her while she's making you dinner, slap her on the ass, call her a slut, pull her head back gently by her hair, kiss her neck, face and ears, then walk away. LIVE like that. Venerate your slut, adore her. She deserves it, and you deserve the love you'll get from doing that.

BE SWEET TO YOUR SLUTTY SLAVE

Compliment your bitch often, and mean it all.

Bring her flowers once in a while. Not to "maintain" her, but because you love her. Better than roses are wildflowers, with a spray of tall grass, that you pick yourself. My very vanilla dad used to do this for my mother, even though he could afford roses. She liked this better. He'd say "Hi sweetie. I picked you some weeds" and give her the beautiful handcrafted bouquet. She adored it. I did too, it was one of the most beautiful things I ever saw my dad do.

Tuck her in at night. Read her (or tell her) a bedtime story. She's your little girl. Nurture her. Kiss her while she sleeps. Wake her in the morning by licking her pussy before you fuck her. (Be her alarm cock!) Love her dearly. She's your good girl.

TEACHING HER TO PROPERLY SUCK YOUR COCK

Good girls suck cock. They want to please their master. But also, there is the added advantage of a guy who's well sucked is more turned on and will fuck the girl harder, and probably more times in a given day.

Blowjobs are important. I had a girlfriend once who could not bring herself to suck cock. I mentioned her before, the one who had been repeatedly orally raped. I never pushed it with her, and held her hand as she went to therapy. I was as supportive as a man could possibly be. Yet, after two years of great fucking, great companionship, but no blowjobs, I had to break up with her. And it did it as sweetly as possible, and we're still friends.

I remember a post from a new sub on a kink web forum. She asked, "What should I expect as a new submissive woman"?

Someone posted back, "You should expect to give a lot of blowjobs."

Dollie and I got a good laugh out of this, because it's true. In the vanilla world, women give blowjobs to get something, or as a rare and special treat to the man, like on his birthday. In the kink world, a slave is expected to provide oral service on command, up to many times a day. And why not? Men love it, and a good slave lives to please her man.



My wife gives me blowjobs on command. I love it, and so does she. She almost always cums from blowing me, and many women can be trained to do this, to love the cock, to picture that they're taking the WHOLE man into their mouth and loving him. Women like my wife, who've been conditioned to like this, can go from zero to 1000 in a few minutes. Sucking cock can be the only foreplay.

My wife is damn experienced. She's been sucking cock for 35 years. She gives amazing blowjobs, and has it down to an art. Here's what she does:

When I'm ready for a blowjob, I tell her, "Get ready to blow me." She sets up some pillows for me at the head of my bed, so I can lean up against the wall. Then she waits on all fours, in a prayerful, reverential bowing position. When I'm finally done answering e-mail or writing (she's masturbating on the bed right now as I write this, because I told her to), I get up, drop my pants, and slide under her, lean against the pillows and say, "Suck, bitch." She does.

She licks my balls a bit, and then crams the cock into her mouth. She never licks around the head, because that's useless. That's what inexperienced cock suckers do. She stays on all fours, and wiggles her ass in the air a little bit for me to look at, so I know she's into it. And she is.

Don't grab a woman's head and force her throat onto your cock. Women often hate this, and it's usually a sign of an inexperienced man. (More on this, including exceptions to this rule, in Chapter Eight.)

Once my wife has my cock into her mouth, it's basically just repetition until I cum. A good blowjob doesn't have a lot of variation, it's simply mechanics. And women will tire from this at first, but can work up to being really good at it, and having stamina, like with any physical exercise.

The repetition is this: she puts her hand firmly around my cock, and uses her spit to lubricate it. She keeps her hand locked to her mouth, she moves her head up and down. It's basically a hand job with a mouth at the end of it. On all fours. Like the little slutty man-pleasing dollie that she is. And she'll use her other hand to alternately massage my balls, and play with my buttohole. This takes balance for a woman to do properly, while resting on her elbows. If she's good at it, and does it a lot, she'll have calluses on her elbows. The wife has them.



Most women are too gentle with the balls. Because a good woman is afraid of hurting us. I find it feels good to have my balls kneaded fairly hard. If you're like this too (many men are), tell your woman. Show her with your own hands how hard you like everything.

Tip: Download a lot of blowjob porn from TheHun.net or BitTorrent. Put it on repeat and make your bitch watch it while waiting around for you to do stuff with her, while you're busy with other things. She'll learn a lot, and also get more and more conditioned to being more and more sexual.

Another thing I love to do is have her lick my balls (or my asshole) while I beat off. Pure bliss! And she actually cums from doing it, and then licks up my cum, and cums again.

MAKING A WOMAN CUM BY NOT CARING

Don't try too hard. Men who really pleasure women can fuck well, but aren't all concerned with "Oh baby, did you cum?" (If a woman cums, hard, you don't *have* to ask!) Here's something that explains it well, something I wrote right after my first threesome, when I was 21:

Sunshine and Aura gleefully jump into my bed, and we fuck all night. I love how easy it is to make fertile little, big-breasted hippie-chix cum. Making love to a woman is always easy for me. I just connect with her soul by talking and listening. I kiss her from toe to head, pet her and kiss her a whole lot on the lips. Then, when she's begging me to fuck her, I refuse and just smooch her a lot more. I kiss and lick her ears and nape and belly. I suck her clitty and then maybe, if she's a good-gurl, I'll fuck her hard and mean and sweet and won't try too hard to make her cum, just use her as my toy. Men who are all concerned about making women cum rarely do. I can't tell when women cum anyway. When I fuck 'em right, it all looks like cumming to me.

FOREPLAY

Some girls need a lot of it. My "script" above describes it well. But I don't really think like most men, that "Everything before sticking it in is 'foreplay', to get the woman ready, and that part's for her, not for me." No, I think of all of everything as sex, whether it's pleasuring only my body, only her body, both bodies, or just our minds. It's all good.

I don't really do much "foreplay" with my wife. I often just say, "Open your legs, bitch", and stick it in, then do stuff most people would consider "foreplay" while I'm fucking her.



And also, as the wife says "Everything about living with Daddy is foreplay. Him EXISTING makes me always ready."

Not all women are this hot to trot all the time, but if you live your life for them, don't deodorize your beautiful smell, and fuck them really well, they're going to be ready to go most of the time, if you've picked the right woman. (Remember, look for ones who like anal! Remember: the anus is a conduit to the infinite. And if they like anal sex, *they love sex!* If they love anal sex, they love *life!*)

LUBE

It's great. It's "foreplay in a jar"....

Sometimes when I'm almost ready to fuck, I'll tell Dollie, "lube up!", which means "kneel on the bed in your slip (she always wears a slip around the house, to be more ready for me at any time), and rub a little lube on your pussy and masturbate." If she's got some new shoes (she buys a lot of shoes), I'll add, "Come on, my sweet and sullied bitch. Let's take those new pumps for a test spin!" She puts on her shoes, lubes her pussy, kneels and masturbates. For Daddy.

I finish up answering e-mail or writing on my computer, and when she cums, I get up, whip my shorts off, push her onto her back, stick my cock into her lubed pussy and fuck her brains out. She loves it.

I recommend Wet Original Gel Lubricant (26 bucks for 18 ounces - which lasts a long time - from www.lovepotions.com)

If you thought that lube is only for dried-out grandmas, you're wrong. It's key. I have always used it, even with young wet women. No matter how wet a woman gets, a little lube will help. After a lot of fucking, even wet pussies can use some lube, as the juices all get less slippery. And it's absolutely needed for anal sex, for tittie fucking, and for fisting.

Also, squirting women can literally "wash away" the natural lubrication that a pussy produces, so it's good to have a ready substitute handy.

If you use too much lube, you can always wipe her pussy (and your cock) off on her slip or on your sheets, which will add even more sex smell to your bed, which is key, as we've learned previously. Sex begets sex.

WOMEN LOOK GOOD IN SLIPS

I can't say this enough. Make `em wear a slip.



There's nothing as naked as a half-dressed woman.

A slip or a babydoll teddy looks scrumptious on any woman. It is the wrapping for the present, a present that you unwrap without removing the wrapping. The slip hides imperfections, feels good on her skin and yours, and gives the feeling to you, and to her, that she's "dressed for sex." This "always-ready" feel is important to slavery. It's part of the beauty of a woman's love for serving her man.

I like classic white slips, because they're cheap. (For me, the cheaper lingerie is, the better. More expensive is fine for vanilla women, but I like my slaves to look like two-bit whores, and low-rent helps with that. Also, there's something very "lady" looking about classic white or pearl-colored slips. That mixes fine in my mind with the whore thing.

I think that for most straight men, their first childhood sexual fantasy was about their mother. Mine was. She was hot, and had me when she was 40, probably part of the reason I like older women. And my preferred body type in women, and dress style, is much like my mother: foxy, plump, big boobs, wearing pumps, slips, perfume, makeup, and pantyhose. (I used to sniff her pantyhose and masturbate when I was a kid. Who *didn't* do that? Come on, be honest....)

My mother dressed classy. She was a lady. I like to take the same style and whore it up in my women. And they have to dress in a slip. When you're a woman in my home, you dress like a sweet whore. Always.

I generally get slips a half-dozen at a time on WalMart.com (for six bucks each) and modify them as needed. I trim the bottom off, because they come too long.

WalMart.com

"Yeah, I know they're destroying small-town America, but hey, nine bucks for a refrigerator!"

—paraphrased from Jon Stewart.

Slips can, nay SHOULD be cut to about an inch or two below the hip bone for maximum sexy effect. This exposes her pussy, makes her feel more "ready", which is a big turn on. For proper length, do it while she's wearing it, standing, with her hands on her head, out of your way. Make a game of it. Say fun, filthy things while you cut it. Be creative. Make it a fake punishment, or a real reward.

Use scissors, but BE CAREFUL, you don't want to harm your wonderful slut. She was given to you by the Universe to venerate and care for.



And start by cutting off less than you think you should, then take the girl for a test-drive fuck in the newly altered slip. You can always cut off MORE, but you can't cut off less.

(I save the part I cut off the bottom of the slip. That part makes a great blindfold, and you can also tie her wrists to the bedpost with it.) I don't have her sew the hem where I cut, I like the trashy look of them being cut sloppily.

By the way, finding a bitch who can sew, AND cook and give good backrubs and blowjobs, on command. This is MUCH more important to your happiness, if you're really honest with yourself, than finding a bitch who looks like a model who can't (or won't) do shit. Skinny bitches can't fuck, and the ones who can are so starved they're crazy. They'll kill you in your sleep.

Altering slips to this length (or buying babydoll slips that are already this length) makes the woman's pussy and ass totally accessible. Looks great as they walk around the house doing chores, waiting for Daddy to say, "Get in the bed, hands at your sides!" or "Stand against the wall, hands at your sides, I'm gonna rub your little pussy until you squirt on the floor!"

And slips cut to hip-bone shortness expose belly a little when the woman's lying down. I love to see and play with a woman's plump little belly while I fuck her. Short slips give you better access and control of her belly, pubis, and all those "girl parts" down below.

If this isn't your thing, cut your woman's slips a little longer.

Fuck your woman as you please, and move her slip around as you please. The woman is your toy, given by god. You are there to complete her. Use her sacred slip as a vestment of virtue. Pull one or both of her tits out and play with them. Stick them back in the slip when you're done. Pull out right before cumming when you fuck her, jack off and cum on the slip. Let her wear your stains with pride around the house. Use your imagination to use your woman, your sacred gifts, as you will, with permission.

A-Mew!

Slips: accessibility is the key. Just reach under and pet her places, any time you like.

THE ANCIENT LESBIAN HAND TECHNIQUE



I can't believe I didn't learn this one until I was 41. Me and my wife were fucking another girl, and this girl was mostly lesbian. Sure, she'd have sex with me too, but she basically seemed like she was just putting up with me to get to my wife. We didn't ask her to come back.

But she did teach me something the wife and I came to jokingly refer to as "The Ancient Lesbian Hand Technique", and it's easy, and a damn good one.

It's basically stimulating the elusive G-spot with your fingers. The G-spot is like an internal clit. It's amazing, and your woman will thank you.

You have to have trimmed nails for this, or you'll hurt her. But you just place the woman on her back, put a little lube on your hand, place your palm up, and insert your three middle fingers inside her pussy, reach as far back as you can, and massage. Search with your fingers for that puffy, furrowed, spongy spot, and push, rub, massage. Some women also like having their tummy or pubic mound grabbed or gently pushed on with your free hand during this maneuver. Rub her clit with your thumb, for extra fun.

It's that simple. She will soon moan and scratch the bed board and alternately yell out your name and the word "GOD", over and over. Try it while kissing her belly and/or calling her a "beautiful moaning slutty little doll angel whore" at the same time (or something similar). WOW.

You can hear Dollie explaining and demonstrating this technique on the pet, here:

http://www.askdollie.com/SAC-126-ANCIENT_LESBIAN_HAND_TECHNIQUE.mp3

You can hear us learning it, in bed, from the girl who taught it to us, here:

http://www.askdollie.com/Submission-Coffee_6-24-07-aGuestInTheNest.mp3

NOW THAT YOU'VE FUCKED HER...

... I'd like to take this opportunity to give you this advice: Be open to asking a woman what she likes. No master is perfect in every way for every slave, and the best masters are teachable enough to realize they can learn from every single woman they ever have sex with.

If you do everything in this chapter, with the right woman, you will own that woman's pussy.

In the next chapter, we'll talk about how to own her whole body and her mind. In the chapter after that, you'll learn how to own her *soul*.

CHAPTER 7

How to Fuck a Woman's Brains Out - *Kings Don't Live this Well*

The whole idea of what I do, all that I do, with fucking, sucking, petting, and the stuff girls and I talk about outside the bed, is all to make the woman hot longer. (And this includes talking about non-sexual things, just keeping her mind stimulated, which stimulates my mind.) What I like to do is keep her in a state of ready semi-arousal while she's just doing my dishes, and in a state of constant near-orgasm and actual orgasm for hours while sexing her. That's what submissive women tend to like and it's how I like to live. It's also how I'm able to always keep women around.

I can only fuck for about 20 minutes, tops, before coming. But my dick does not go limp when I cum. And while I wait a few minutes to feel like fucking again, I do lots of other things to keep her (and me) hot.

Even if you can't fuck ten times a day like me, you can still fuck a woman's brains out, if you keep her hot with other pussy play and mind play in between fuckings.

If you do everything in this chapter, you will own a woman's entire body, and her mind.

I'LL DO ANYTHING. WELL, ALMOST...

I'll pretty much do anything sexually with a woman. (And I've had sex with a few men, a long time ago. I much prefer women.)

To clarify: I'll do anything sexually with a sober, consenting adult woman, as long as it does not enter into my hard limits. My hard limits are anything involving children, animals, shit, blood, or risk of death or serious injury (to anyone, including me), and it has to involve my wife. I don't have sex without my wife (except masturbation, and I do that a lot, even though I fuck a lot every day). I do have anal sex (both me



fucking women in the ass, and them sticking vibrating sex toys up my ass), but that does not involve shit, we use an enema to clean the shit out and get it out of the way first.

But that leaves a LOT of different sex stuff. We're going to touch on most of the things I like in this chapter and the next. (I say "most" not because I'm hiding anything, but because if I listed it all, it would fill the whole book, and there's a lot more to talk about than particular acts.)

Here you will learn about how to skillfully play your lover's body like an instrument.

SHAVE THAT FUCKING THING!

I hate pubic hair. Most men do. (Again, any time I say something like that in here, know that I understand "YKINMK.") We like those pussies shaved. This isn't so the women look like little girls, it's so it's easier to fuck them over and over. Pussy hair gets caught on your dick (especially if you're using condoms) and causes friction that you don't want.

I'll fuck a woman with pussy hair, ONE DAY, but if she comes back, I tell her, "We're shaving that fucking thing." And if you fuck her really well the first time, you'll own her pussy enough to be able to tell her to shave that thing. I have dog clippers (electric hair clippers) for this. I use dog clippers, and then carefully do the rest with shaving cream, warm water, and new disposable razors. It may take a few razors to do this correctly if it hasn't been done in a while.

There's also a very fun dominant component to shaving a girl's pussy. You're in control, and actually affecting her body. She'll like it, if she's wired that way, and if you're nice.

If you're not comfortable shaving her, have her do it herself, either at your house, or tell her over the phone to do it before she comes back. And if she doesn't already, tell her to shave her legs and armpits. This all makes a woman much more lady like, and more fun to fuck. (At least in my mind. Some guys like hairy bitches. More power to 'em. But body hair on a woman, other than the hair on her head, is a deal breaker for me.)

(The rest of this shaving section is written by Dollie. Have your slave read this before you make her shave, and read it twice if you plan to shave her yourself):

Dollie Dishes on "Shavin' That Thang":

OK, it's hairy. Now you gotta fix it. Or have her fix it. Whatever suits



you, it's Master's choice.

I'll assume you're going to do it for her. The first time at least.

If it's wild and overgrown, or particularly robust, trim it first. Regular barber shop electric trimmers do nicely. (And the noise is kinda intimidating, it a good way, if she's into a little mindfucking, and there will be more on the fun of consensual "mind fucks" in the next chapter.) Or, if you must, CAREFULLY use some sharp scissors. Trim it short, but you don't need to try and make her bald, just to about ¼ inch or so. This is perhaps best done outside the bath or shower, while over a towel to catch the clippings, or, if over a hard floor, to sweep them up after. Make her do the sweeping and clean up.

Now move into the shower or bathtub. Let the hair get nice and wet with warm water to soften the skin and hair. If you're doing it, I recommend you have her lie down on her back, legs open. Lather it up, don't be stingy. I personally like gels or gels that turn to foam, but there's also a non-foaming gel made especially for "bikini line" shaving, Anti-Bumps Shave Gel by BikiniZone, www.bikinizone.com. I recommend and use it. The nice thing about gels is that you can better see what you're shaving.

Use a fresh, not electric, razor, one you're comfortable with. I prefer to use a brand new blade, but some like one that has been used once.

Begin with the mons pubis, her mound. Be sure the skin is smooth and taut, you can pull up on her belly a bit if you need to. Shave in the direction of hair growth, gently, don't tug. Use smooth strokes, and rinse the razor often. Be sure to include the crease along her thighs. Go extra gently over any groves and rises on her body. Rinse, and repeat if you missed anything.

Now for the labia, the lips. With her legs open wide, lather the area to be shaved. Shave one side at a time, moving from the thigh toward her vagina. (Do not get shaving gel into the vagina or the urethra, or rinse quickly and well if you do.)

Continue until each side is clean and smooth. Look for stragglers and fix them.

Be sure she tells you if she feels any irritation, nicks, or cuts. Stop if she does. If she's not used to shaving her puss, the skin can be extremely sensitive the first few times you shave her.

The first time you (or she) shave her girlie parts, don't try to shave



against the direction of hair growth. Yes, the shave may not be as close as it could be, but you also don't want to have her suffer through horrid bumps and ingrown hairs. They itch, and hurt. (Some itching, as it first grows out, is normal. With time and repetition, it gets better.)

Once her body's become accustomed to this regimen, try shaving both directions, with the direction of growth first, then against it. This will get the closest, smoothest shave possible.

Remember, keep the skin as taut and smooth as possible. Otherwise, folds and bumps will end up nicked and ouchy. This can be especially tricky if you're shaving between the outer, upper lips. I tend to use two fingers of the hand not holding the razor to pull the lips up and apart. Care and practice will show you what works best for you.

When you're finished, pat her dry, and apply a nice, gentle lotion, or some safflower oil. (Yes, that stuff that's in your kitchen cabinet. It's the best body oil there is, and naturally unscented.)

Shaving her puss is not something she can do everyday. So, there will be short periods when she's not absolutely hair-free. Every three to four days, twice a week, works best for me. The idea is not to continually assault that tender flesh. Especially if you're having lots of sex. That friction can cause irritation, so be aware.

Do not shave when there are ingrown hairs, bumps or rashes. Let it all heal first or you'll only make things worse.

Waxing her is another alternative. This can be done at home, but is better done in a salon. (I've never found a home waxing kit that worked well enough, and was cheap enough, to convince me the economy was worth not having to pay someone to do it well.) My experience with waxing is this: The initial period of hairlessness is longer than with shaving, but you have to wait until there is enough regrowth to wax again. This meant I was furrer than I liked to be in between waxings, and so opted for shaving.

The ultimate way to be hairless is to have laser hair removal. However, this isn't inexpensive, and requires some commitment to a series of treatments. If this appeals to you, I'd suggest you do more research. It never appealed to me, so I can't offer more.

OK, I'll hand you back to Daddy's brilliance now!

—Dollie Llama

A WOMEN'S SCENT

Is up to you really. Whether or not she wears deodorant (women produce pheromones that a lot of men like, if they don't deodorize), whether or not she wears perfume.

I'd recommend NOT letting her use vaginal deodorants. They smell horrible, and they don't need 'em. A pussy frequently cleaned with soap and water smells great and doesn't need crap like this. It's just more of the CON trying to convince women that they're not perfect just as God made them, and trying to pick pockets by remote (mind) control.

FLUID BONDING.

Fluid Bonding is when you are in a long-term relationship and decide to throw out the condoms and fuck bareback, but do it in a smart way. And it's not a first date kind of thing. (Well, usually. Dollie and I knew from our first night of fucking that we were *together*. And we both had recent clean bills of health for our special places.) First, one of you has to be fixed, or she has to be on either the pill or an I.U.D. Secondly, you both have to both go get clean "vet checkups" from the doctor or clinic. That is, get tested for HIV, gonorrhea, chlamydia, HPV, and any other nasty crotch crickets that God or the secret government scientists come up with in the future.

Often, a couple in an open (poly) relationship will be fluid bonded to each other, but use condoms with anyone else. Fluid bonding is nice. Cum is fun, and it's a lot nicer to pump it into your diddle dolly's pussy, mouth or on her tits, belly and face than to spill your seed into a balloon and toss it out with the coffee grounds, cigarette butts and cat shit.

RAINY DAY FUN ACTIVITIES (ADVANCED)

Here's a list of advanced stuff we like....It's rainy day fun (or everyday fun) for you and your girl. Kings don't live this well. But you can.

TRY IT ON YOURSELF FIRST

Keep in mind that some stuff here would cause pain or emotional discomfort, when used outside a sexual context. That's basically the definition of BDSM. BDSM, with people who are "wired that way" involves taking your lover to a place where these things are not perceived as pain or humiliation, but as intensely delicious stimulation.

Not everything is for everyone. Discuss things with your partner before trying something new, be respectful of her boundaries, and enjoy!

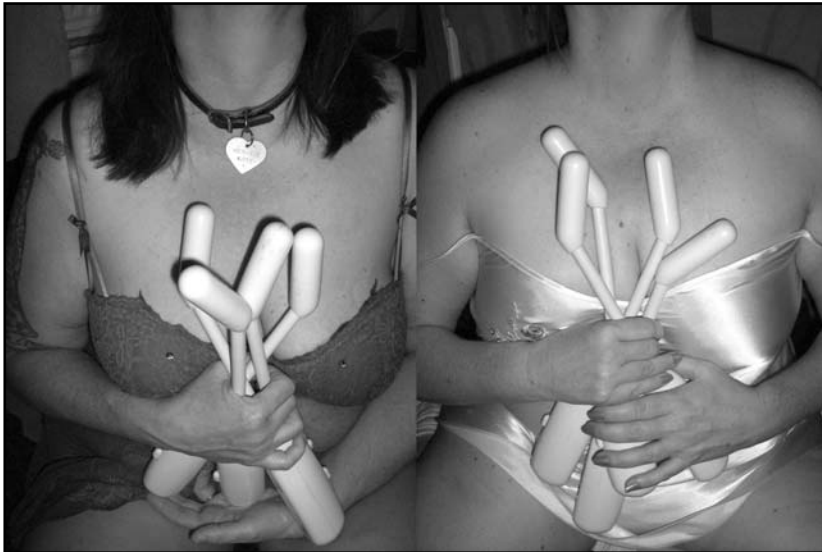


To be a good master of another, you need to know what they're going through, so you can combine that with your knowledge of their own limits for pain, pleasure and mindfuck, and not take them too far.

Try any new toy or technique on yourself before you try it on your woman. Give yourself an enema, insert that inflatable butt plug vibrator in your own ass, whip yourself with that new cane, etc. Dig it. You've just become a more open minded citizen of the planet earth!

THINGS I LIKE TO DO WITH WOMEN, THAT WOMEN TEND TO LOVE:
This is a very partial list, to inspire you. Try some of and see what works for you and your sweet bitch. Then get creative and start building your own repertoire.

Enjoy!



My hot bitches with my cool toys
(l to r: Dollie Llama, the pet)

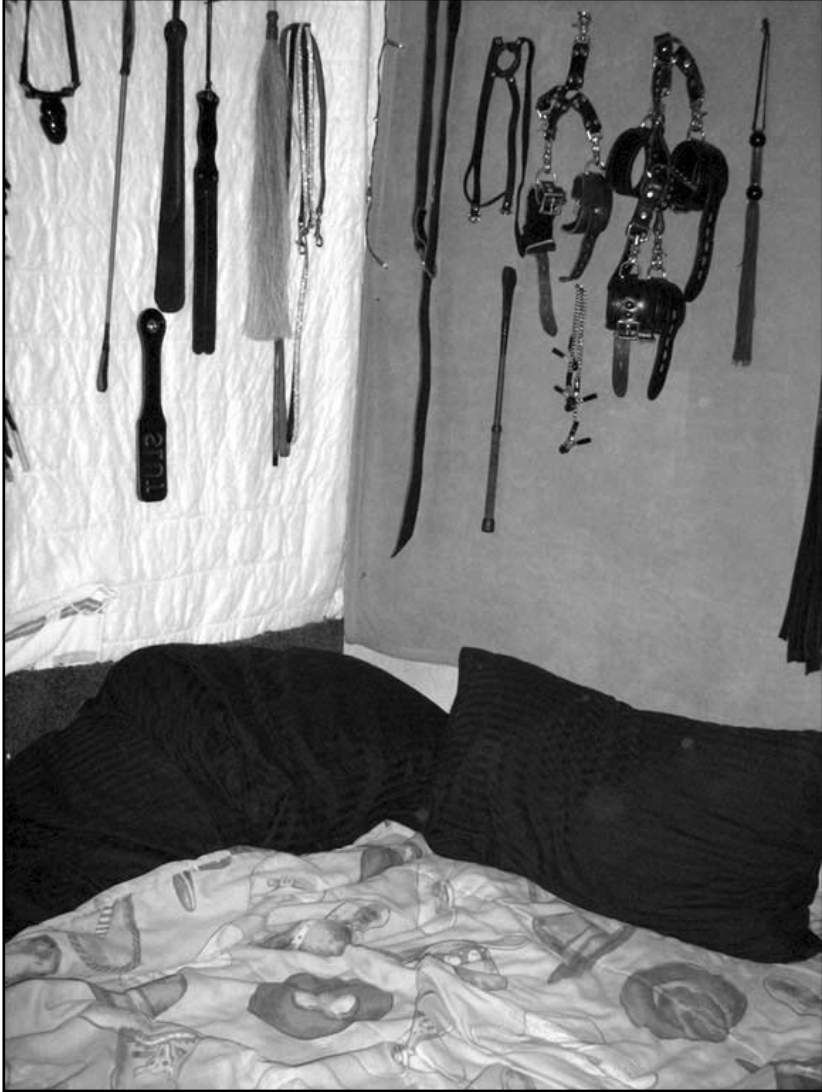
TOYS

Some people think that sex toys are for couples with lousy sex lives, that a vibrator, especially one shaped like a cock, is only needed if they man's cock doesn't work well. WRONG! Sex toys are used and loved by hypersexual couples like Dollie and me to make great sex stellar and make stellar sex absolutely *religious*. (Unless otherwise indicated, you can get most of these sex-specific toys from Stockroom.com)

<http://www.stockroom.com/Hitachi-Magic-Wand-P263.aspx>

This workhorse is great not only for pussy rubbing, but also for back-rubs after a long day at the salt mines. (Both for you, and for your slave.) Every enlightened man should own one. (Or two. Many people get two, because they get hot after running for about an hour. If you get two, you can let one cool while using the other.) These plug into the wall, so don't take them into the shower. The 'Wand isn't shaped like a dick, its end is too large to really insert, it's for putting *on* people, not in them. (Though there a few optional toys that go over the end and are insertable.)

Try holding it on her clit while you fuck her missionary style.



Toy wall over my bed, in The Internet
(Note rugs on all the walls for additional sound conditioning)

Then try holding it on her butthole while you fuck her doggy style.

Vibrating Dildos

Dildos are things that are meant to be inserted. They're shaped roughly like a cock. Some vibrate, some don't. Me and Dollie like the ones that do vibrate. There's a million varieties of these, from little pencil shaped

ones that fit in a woman's purse discretely, to giant ones that look like cocks. Look around online and see what you like.

Flex-O-Pleasers

Wow. I can't say enough about these. Designed specifically for anal play, this has a small, elongated rounded probe (like a long bullet vibrator) at a slight angle, on a flexible wand attached to a handle that houses the batteries. (Photo on page 86 is my bitches with bouquets of Flex-O-Pleasers.) Best 16 bucks you'll ever spend. Mindblowing. Special. Modern technology at its best. Will extend your lifespan. OH MY FUCKING GOD! MEW MEW MEW!

We got ours here:

<http://www.adult-toys.md/adult-erotic-toys-44681.aspx>

We own four of them. One for each "special place" on each girl, Dollie and the pet.

Flex-O-Pleasers are great for anally training a woman (or yourself, if you're bi, but reluctant) to love anal sex. They're good for training because they're not as large as a cock, but the slight angle on the inserted part allow for being turned gently around inside the anus, to vibrate all the internal surfaces.

(We'll have info on cleaning out the butthole before anal play, in the next chapter.)

A tip on vibrating anal insertables: They go in and come out easier if they're already turned on and vibrating when you do so.

TOY CARE AND STORAGE

Toys inserted into the pussy or the butthole can be covered with a condom prior to use to make cleanup easier. And if you're not fluid bonded with the hole you're sticking it in, use a condom for sure. Whether you use a condom or not, after play toys should be cleaned with soap and hot water, or with sterile wipes, then dried with a towel and put away. This is usually part of the slave's job, and she can be trained to do it without being told.

We keep our whip and cane toys on nails on my wall, and our insertables in an aluminum briefcase we bought at Home Depot for 30 bucks. It keeps the cats from fucking with the toys, and also looks damn cool. Like James Bondage 007's briefcase.

PERVERTIBLES

Pervertibles are items that were not intended for sexual use, have a



more “vanilla” use, but can be “perverted” by using them as sex toys. This can run the gamut from using a wooden cooking spoon as a spanker for ladies’ asses, to modifying a high-RPM motor and a dildo into a fucking machine (probably not safe, so I’m not going to go there).

A great place to get items to pervert is Home Depot. In fact, a lot of kinky people refer to Home Depot as “Pervert’s Paradise.” Walk around one of these places (or any similar hardware superstore) and you’ll start salivating, and probably come home with a car full of stuff. Bring your slave. Make it a date.

Here’s a few Pervertibles that we like:

Handicapped Toilet Accessibility Bar

Made to fasten to the wall in the bathroom to help handicapped people use the bathroom. You can get one and fasten it to the wall of your bedroom to tie ladies to. (You can also put one in your bathroom, to tie ladies to for toilet play, which will be covered in the next chapter.) You will need a stud finder (also available at Pervert’s Paradise) to install one of these. If you’re not experienced with this kind of task, someone at the store can walk you through it. (I’d recommend NOT telling him what you’re doing it for, however.)



Dollie and the pet attached with leg cuffs and carabiners to toilet assistance bars I mounted on my bedroom walls (note rugs on all the walls for additional sound conditioning)

Work Gloves

Wear ordinary canvas work gloves or gardening gloves while fucking your woman. Touch her all over. Sort of feels like someone is molesting her, in a delicious way.

Ping Pong Paddle

Great for spanking ladies

Clothespins

Can be used as nipple clamps, on her, or on you. (I like a little pain play once in a while. It doesn't make you less of a man. It makes you more of a hypersexual man, if you're into it. I sometimes am.)

Pervert's Paradise has stronger clips, if your woman is a total "pain slut" like mine. A good rule of "thumb" is this: With most people, if they can stand to have something clamped on the web of flesh between their thumb and index finger, it can go on their nipples.

You can also just pinch her nipples while you fuck her. That's a fun one.

Carabiners (also spelled "Carabineers")

Quick-release clips for mountain climbing. They're cheap. Useful for tying up ladies. They are fast and easy to release, if you ever need to get her out quickly (safeword, fire, oopses).

Eyehooks

Get big ones. They're cheap too. Sink them into your wall, into a stud or doorframe, and tie ladies to that.

Another source for pervertibles is any large pet store or equestrian supplier. Check out the collars, leashes, whips and more. We love our horsehair whip - lovely stingy bite, but doesn't leave marks.

Some pet places also have an engraving machine for pet tags, so if you do collar your babe, you can put "Property of..." around her neck. Or, if it's just a play collar, you can simply make ones that say "slut", "slave", "kitty", or any other pet name you have for your human pets.

MORE FUN STUFF (NON-TOY)

Watch Porn While She Blows You.

If she has issues with this, and they're not too bad, explain that this is making you hypersexual, and she'll get laid more. Because she will.



Talk Dirty!

In bed, outside the bed, and via e-mail when she's at work. My woman loves this. Yours may too.

For e-mail, make sure she's got a job where this won't get her fired, and have her use a G-Mail account, *not* her work e-mail. I made Dollie set up a G-Mail account that only I know the address of. That makes her know she's special. And the user name I made her get is something like DaddysLittleSlut_69 (that's not it, but you get the idea).

The mind *is* the most important sex organ, and good dirty talk "speaks" to that.

Talking dirty is an art. Both in what you say, and in how you say it. I like to say it in a soft/loud/soft/loud/soft way, often right in her ear. That makes her really hot, and she becomes more open to me, because she doesn't know what to expect. The soft opens up her heart, and the loud makes her stand at attention in her brain.

Here's some examples (transcribed by marion of The House of Reason from stuff I said to Dollie and the pet during sex, recorded, and put on Submission and Coffee. Thanks marion!)

Read this and then use it to learn to do your own.

I love you, baby....Daddy is here....you are safe in my hands. I care about everything that happens to you. You are my baby-doll. Shhhhh. . .quiet my sweet little squirmworm...father loves you....I am here to protect and nurture you....I adore you and love you and only you....I validate and verify and authenticate you, sweetie. I GIVE YOU THE RIGHT TO EXIST. YOU ARE MY WOMAN. I AM YOUR MAN....You completely complete me and endorse me. You are my reason to love. I have never loved another human the way that I love you. You are my rockin' little sperm-trap lovergurl. Me poca mariposa, you are my only darling, my fluffpuff kittywhore....

Baby come here! Look how much cum is on this spoon. Look, come here. Eat Daddy's cum and cum for Daddy... NOW LICK ALL THAT CUM UP...Good girl. Cum for your Master, cum bitch, cum for your Master. Cum for the Daddy, stay for the whippins.

Beautiful little slut, kiss mew....Mew, mew for Daddy. Mew like a retarded kitty. Good little cum toilet....and you're both twitching....panties down around your legs like dirty little fucking sex

crime victims, I like it. Ohh, twitching like a bitch, yes you are, oh good girls, good girls, hi Dollie, love you baby! Hey pet, good girl! Kiss my back and rub my balls while I fuck her, I like it.

Good girl. You are my little cum toilet. Cum for Daddy. Mew for Daddy. I like it. You are a good little slut. You're a dirty little cock sucking whore, oh baby, did I harm you? No? Good! Good girl! I'm going to nail you to the center of the earth with my cock.

Talking dirty while paddling a woman's ass is absolutely wonderful. Try it!

Erotic love letters

An extension of dirty talk. I'm not talking about typical Internet HNG I.M. "On your knees, bitch!" stuff, but fucking *poetry* for the ages. Dollie and I write this kind of stuff and send it to each other by e-mail, and she leaves it for me on handwritten notes when she leaves for work, for me to read when I wake up.

(Read Dollie's book *Diary of an S&M Romance*. It has a lot of the e-mails we sent each other early on when we were courting. It's beautiful.)

Note from Dollie when I e-mailed her the previous chapter to proof at in her cubicle on her lunch hour:

Yummy! Reading that "how to fuck" part made me remember the oh-so-many times you did exactly all that - now I'm twitchy and damp, and heading for the ladies' room when I'm done writing this. You are the god of Fuck, Daddy.

And I love the intro to the "advanced" chapter - can't wait to read it - tonight?

My writing stirs my wife, and I also love that, through books like this and the podcast, it's a love song for all the cubicle girls in the world. (A lot of women listen to us fucking and talking on Submission and Coffee at their desks on ear buds. I love that. It's a global gang bang with me, my wife, the pet, and 10,000 ladies.)

e-mail from Dollie to me from her while she was at work:

Daddy, thank you for making my life so wonderful. For teaching



me, training me, loving me, spanking me, fucking me, and being my best friend. For believing in me, and bringing out the best in me.

And for putting a toy hedgehog in my purse! Mew!

You do own me, Daddy, body and soul, heart and mind, pussy, ass and mouth.

—Daddy's little cube slut

Blindfolds

Lovely. The removal of sight heightens smell and touch, and emphasizes her vulnerability and your control.

Remember the cloth you saved from the bottom when you shortened your girl's slip? Tie that around her eyes, in bed, or out. (If it's outside the bed, be sure to lead her around by the hand, or by a short dog leash, so she doesn't bump into anything and hurt herself.)

Miscellaneous Amazing Fun In Bed:

Grab her tits or pubic mound or belly as a handle when you fuck her. (There is a certain psychology to grabbing belly roll. First, it shows her you're not afraid of a little fat, and you find it sexy. Second, it shows her how absolutely in control of her you are. Third, it feels great to her, and intensifies orgasm. Also, try grabbing the pubic mound while you fuck her, but use your thumb to rub her clit at the same time. Rub her buttock with your other hand.

Kiss her after you cum in her mouth. Taste your cum. Or, if you're with two girls (more on that in the next chapter), make them pass your cum from one mouth to the other. This is called "snowballing", and it's HOT.

Suck the cum out of her pussy. You can do this, or the second girl can do this.

Running your fingernails along the length of underside of her leg while you fuck her. (This will make her gasp and twitch!) It's especially easy if you're doing it missionary style, with her legs pointing toward your shoulders, and she's holding the underside of her legs. This is how I pose Dollie about 80% of the time that we fuck.

Take off her pump, rip a hole in her pantyhose, and suck her toes and lick between her toes as you're fucking her. This will blow her mind with pleasure.

Slapping Ass While Fucking

Easy with doggy style or with scissor style. Scissor style is a sort of modified missionary position, where you're above her, she's on her back, but your legs and her legs are scissored rather than parallel. Great because it makes it easier to play with her ass, butthole and pussy with your hands. Try it and try rubbing her clit and her butthole as you fuck her. Or have her lie on her back, but twist at the hip, one leg in the air. Straddle her other leg.

Licking Ears

Girls love this. Don't be sloppy, be reserved, and try it with lightly sucking the ear lobe, then mix some "in your ear" dirty talk in there.

Kissing Her All Over

Romantic! Chicks dig romance. Try it while fucking, or before and after.

Backrubs

You giving her one, and/or her giving you one. During sex and after. (Before if you want, but that always strikes me as a bit vanilla. Lol. That's how vanilla guys try to "score." "Hey baby, want a backrub?" Pleh!)

Massage Fucks

Fuck her doggy style, and massage her ass, lower back and butthole while fucking her. Fuck her doggy style, and insert fingers in her butthole while fucking her. (Try both of these without, and also with, the Hitachi Magic Wand.)

Face rubs

You giving her one, and/or her giving you one. Before, during and after fucking.

Bolt rubs

You giving her one, and/or her giving you one. Before, during and after fucking. "Bolts", are what we call the joints on the side of the head, just below and behind the ear. People hold a lot of tension in their bolts. I call them "bolts" as in "Frankenstein bolts", even though Frankenstein's bolts were on his neck.

Bondage, Beginning:

Tying Up One Leg or One Arm

Fun. Exciting. Use leg cuffs (available from Stockroom.com) or a belt. Tie her up and fuck her, or tie her up and play with her. It shows her mind and body that she has, at least for this moment, turned control over to you. Be careful you don't do any bondage too tight. You should



be able to slip your pinky finger between the cuff and her leg or arm. And of course, RESPECT HER SAFEWORD.

Nibbling and Biting

You on her, or her on you, but with you directing.

Try nibbling on her inner thigh lightly, then harder, as she nears orgasm.

Hair Pulling

Hot. Chicks dig it. Don't pull any hair out, and don't hurt her, but in sex, hair pulling can be wonderful. Especially while fucking.

Sniff Her Panties

While you fuck her. Or stuff them in her mouth. Or tie her panties around her head so the crotch is under her nose. Or tie the *other* girl's panties around her head so the crotch is under her nose. (Great for training bi-curious women to be less reluctant with male/female/female 3-ways. Scent is a powerful memory aid. Get her used to sniffing the other girl's crotch while cumming, and she'll be more into playing with, and especially blowing, the other girl.)

Panty Sniffing For Fun And Prayer

Make her leave her panties for you to sniff while looking at porn, while she's at work.

Vibro-Suck

She sucks your dick while vibrating herself.

Vibro-Fuck

You vibrate her clit while you fuck her.

Fantasies:

Think of whorish things while you fuck her.

swing party fantasies

slave trading fantasies

(I use both of these when looking at porn, and also when fucking women. These "slave trading fantasies" are particularly delicious with my bitches, and also allows me to look at normal "slut" porn and envision it as kinky. I picture that the women are being sold as slaves, and men are getting to try them out before they're purchased. Yeah, I think the concept of actually selling a human is horrible in real life, but in fantasy, I feel it's fine. I also have porn fantasies and actual fuck-girl fantasies that the women are being held somewhere and trained for sexual servitude. Yay!)

Tell her what's going on in your head if you want, incorporate it into

dirty talk if you want, or keep it to yourself. Your woman, your choice. You can also work out role-playing scenarios with the woman, where you act out any of these, or anything else you (or you and her) can come up with. Your choice, brother.

Tittie Fucking

Only possible if she has big boobs. Lube up her tits, have her kneel in front of you and hold them together, and you fuck her titties and cum all over them. Some girls will try to suck your dick while you do this, but I find that just gets in the way. If you're not into that, and she tries, tell her to stop. Your woman, your choice.

Pantyhose Fuck

Have her wear pantyhose. Tie her up or not. Cut the crotch out of the pantyhose CAREFULLY, then fuck her through the crotch hole. I call this "Opening the seal on a new girl", even if it's not a new girl to me.

The way to do this safely is put your hand inside, past the beltline hem, and protect her pussy. Use scissors, and cut a small hole, while cutting away from her body. Then put the scissors away safely, and just rip the small hole big. This is great just for fun, but also for rape fantasy play (more on that in the next chapter). Pantyhose are cheap. Buy a few pairs of a few different sizes and keep them on hand for different-sized gals. (Dollie adds, "Once you've cut the pantyhose, keep them. Have her wear them under her dress to the movies or the book store or to work. Keeps her mind on why she must be accessible - to you.")

Rope Bondage

This is what a lot of people think of when they think of bondage, but I don't do it, so I don't know much about it. If you want to know more, check out the Ropecast podcast: <http://www.ropecast.net/>

Dollie wrote this in *Diary of an S&M Romance*:

There are a lot of people at any given dungeon who are very into "show." Intricate rope bondage, fancy bullwhipping. Those people are lots of fun to watch, but Daddy says it's not for him. He says, "All I need is a whip, and pretty girl in a slip wearing lipstick." (Though Daddy prefers a leather slapper to a whip. But he does like me in a slip. Daddy prefers girls to look girly, rather than having them done up in leather or latex, which is a little more common at dungeons.)

and I added this in the same book:



I have no desire to do elaborate rope bondage on you. I am amazed by the artistry of photos of rope work done well by others. I appreciate it on an aesthetic level. But I got kicked outta Boy Scouts for smoking and never learned ropemanship. And also, ropes take up valuable time we could be fucking. But I dig a quick switch on your ass before, during and after. And most of what I do involving "dominance" involves the very corrupt stuff I whisper and shout into your ear during the act. And stuff like not letting you speak. Nice little power play for a little man like me. And you love it.

Kitty Play/Puppy Play

Me and the wife mew at each other all the time. Most girls like to mew. I also sometimes put a collar on her and use a leash to lead her around the house/bedroom/bed. Also nice is, instead of a collar, a pretty red ribbon. Like she's your present.

NOTE: In this case, the "collar" is just for play, not an actual "collaring." (Collaring is like a BDSM wedding, sort of. I'll cover actual *Collaring* briefly in the next chapter.)

Eyes

Tell her to close her eyes or open her eyes while fucking or sucking. Your choice.

Role Playing

What vanilla people do when they feel kinky. We like role play too, though. Farmer's wife, traveling salesman with hooker, white trash crack whore with blue eye shadow, etc. Be creative, make up your own after you try the ones I've listed. Get verbal and filthy.

Make her take off her slip, put on bra, panties and pumps, and suck your dick with both her hands, one on your balls, one locked to her lips jacking you off into your mouth, her ass high in the air, wiggling. Whip her, or not. Cum in her mouth, say "Good girl!", then tell her to stay on all fours until you tell her otherwise. Get up, answer some fan e-mails, work on that novel for a while, administer your world empire, then either tell her to get up and go about her day, or, if inspired, pull her panties out of the way and fuck her from behind, in her pussy or her ass.

And lastly, one of our favorites,
Frozen Cum!

Beat off while smelling her panties and looking at porn while she's gone. When you cum, scrape it off your hands, cock and belly with a



tablespoon. Stick the spoon in the freezer. (Probably best to only do this if you don't have roommates. But if you're really wanting to be a master of fuck, you'll work toward not having roommates, unless they're your sex slaves. Roommates get in the way of great sex.)

Meet her at the door with a spoon of frozen cum, shut the door once she enters, push her up against the wall or bend her over any handy furniture. Stick the spoon in her mouth. Reach under her dress or down her pants. Stroke, rub and pet her pussy until she cums, while she sucks the cum pop, and while you talk dirty and call her "Good Girl!" (For added pleasure, beat off a few times and FILL the spoon with frozen cum. Dollie adds, "YAY!")

Well, there you have it. If you do half of the things on this list, you will go where few men have gone before. And your slave will thank you, and you will be likely to *own* her, in a deep and loving way that no vanilla man can own a woman.

So, now that you own your woman's entire body and her mind, proceed a chapter. That's where you'll learn to own her *soul*.

Chapter 8

How to Fuck a Woman's Brains Out – Holy God of Fuck!

**"You can do *anything* you want to me, Sir."
–Dollie Llama, to me, on a daily basis.**

DOCTORATE-LEVEL GREAT SEX

NOTE: if you skipped ahead to this chapter, go back and read the rest of the book leading up to it, even if you already consider yourself an advanced fucker. There's more to it than that, you may still learn something, and you also missed the part where I tell you the meaning of life. GO BACK NOW!

Basically, the idea of all this super-advanced stuff is to produce out-of-body type experiences called "subspace" and "domspace."



From *Diary of an S&M Romance*:

Subspace is the endorphin-drunk state a sub gets in after a good flogging, fucking and kneeling to serve her Master. It's been compared to heroin. Daddy also gets into what he calls Dom space (like subspace) during/after a session....Endorphin rush, love hangover, disorientation. But it's not as intense as the sub's experience. Mystics speak of having out-of-body experiences. For me, subspace is an out-of-mind experience - I am nothing but my body, an instrument played by another for our mutual joy. When flying way out there, I can accept, and enjoy, real pain. I find redemption in fear. I lose my will, my need to do anything beyond exist for the immediacy of the sensation. My endorphins are flooding; I am ecstatic. Endorphins are key to subspace. So is absolute trust in your partner.

So, eager male, in Chapter One, I said:

"I can fuck a woman until she has so many orgasms that she passes out. I've done this with many woman. And I do this at least twice as week with my wife....I will teach you how to do this in this book. (Not with my wife, but with any other cool woman.)"

Well, this is the chapter where I tie all my experience together and teach you how to turn your smart little girlfriend into a cock-lobotomized fuck doll bitch who cannot speak, at least for a little while.

And the thing is, if you fuck a woman's brains out (not even needing to go to the point of passing out, but really fuck them *well*) often, and with love, and over a period of time, you will partially fuck out the part of the brain that worries and frets, while leaving the parts that create and entertain and can do complex editing tasks (or whatever) for you intact. AND, while she'll still be smart, maybe even smarter, from all this great sex, when you are done listening to her at any particular time, you can say "Please shut up now, Daddy needs to think" and instead of slapping you and walking out the door like an unfucked bitch will, she'll say "Yes sir", smile and curl up at your feet until you need her again.

SO...As I said, there's very little I won't do sexually. My wife is the same way.

ALL WOMEN ARE BISEXUAL...

...at least in my bed, under my spell.

3-SOMES:

I've heard it said that "A threesome ain't no thang, it's just *two* girls you don't feel like talking to after." This is horseshit.

Only a small percentage of people have ever been in a threesome, and even fewer than that have been in a great threesome. There is little on this earth to match it, and it's the closest to being a king or a god that a mortal man can hope to experience, at least in this life.

One of my favorite movies is *Office Space*. There's a scene in that movie where one character asks another character, "What would you do if you had a million dollars?" His answer? "Two chicks at the same time."

You don't need a million dollars to do two chicks at the same time. You just need to be sexy, smart, respectful, first master doing *one* chick, and have good people skills.

A lot of guys think "But I can't satisfy two chicks all night long." But two chicks is actually easier, because you can make them have sex with *each other* while you recharge.

There are some challenges. You gotta be good to both. You gotta watch out for, and lovingly deal with, jealousy if it arises. Aftercare is even more important (though if they're confident with your love of them, or at least the alpha sub know she will always be queen bee), you can walk away and let them aftercare and pet and kiss each other.

It's easier to find a second girl to play than to find the first. Once you have the first bitch, the others show up. Though if you and the first one are deeply in love, it's less likely that the second one will want to come back.

Two girls is more fun than three or four. And more fun than more than one guy and more than one girl. Three is the best number for group sex. More than that, and it becomes an orgy. Orgies are less spiritual, with everyone trying to do everyone. Orgies are like an athletic event, with less intimacy and sweetness.

"Dating seven women isn't seven times the fun, it's seven times the hassle. And one of them always feels like killing you."

—Me, back when I was in a popular rock band.

Make both your sweet bitches lie on the bed, in their whore clothes, with their legs open, and make 'em rub each other's pussies. Flip a coin



to see who you fuck first. Fuck one, fuck the other, fuck them back and forth, fuck one while kissing the other, then switch. Or use one as your support...like the racing pit crew...she rubs parts of both of you, inserts things, gets sodas, etc. Take turns at who does what. Love up *all* your bitches.

Sex with two girls isn't over when you're done. Have them do each other, but pet them.

The possibilities of things to do increase mathematically when you have two girls in your bed instead of one. Here's just a short list of possibilities, to whet your interest:

All the things in the one-girl list in last chapter, plus: Stand while they kneel, have one suck your dick while the other licks your buttohole, kisses your ass all over, and massages your ass, legs, and lower back. Put them side by side, and fucking them alternately, missionary style. Slap, kiss, talk dirty to one while fucking the other. Before you cum, pull out, stick your dick in the other one, and cum in her. Pull the panties off of one and stuff them into the mouth/face of the other. Make them trade panties. Make 'em do each other. Have the first girl lay against the wall at the head of your bed, sitting up, with her legs open. Make the second girl lay on her back, with her head between the first girl's legs. The second girl also has her legs open. You fuck the second girl while the first girl masturbates with one hand and uses her other hand to stroke the hair and tits of the second girl, the one you're fucking. Make one kneel and wait for her chance to lick and clean up. Or do them both for totally spiritual beautiful sex.

FLIP A COIN

Have the alpha sub (usually your wife, or the first one collared, or the one more important to you – often the one you live with) call it in the air. If she wins, fuck her first. If the beta sub wins, fuck her first. Regardless, pull out before you cum, and stick it in and cum in the other. Then make the first one lick the cum out while on all fours while you spank her and call her dirty names.

Also try dice. Sorta like the coin flip, but can also be done with one girl. Make a list of filthy things to do, write them down with the numbers one-six next to them, then roll the dice to see what to do to whom.

With two bitches, you can let *them* do the aftercare. After you cum, you can get up and go answer e-mail or work or clean up or whatever, while the girls pet and nurture each other and hug like happy kitties. Then after you feel horny again, jump back into the bed and fuck them more or have them blow you. They're probably still hot to trot. Women stay hot longer than men.



Make sure your girls play nice with their sister subs. Dump any beta subs who don't. Mine get along great.

Be sure to treat your alpha sub a little nicer than your beta sub. The beta is more expendable. The alpha sticks with you. Though Dollie (by *far* my alpha, she's my wife, I'm gonna be with her *forever*) and I *really* like our beta, our girlfriend, the pet. We care for them.

There is something beautiful to a submissive about lovingly being treated in bed as an interchangeable object, *in the course of play*. If they each know you venerate them for them, really love them and the things that make them unique, mentally and sexually, they tend to love it. There is something beautiful about being treated like an object when you know you're really not, and it's really just a form of fantasy mixed with the reality of action.

But be aware, sometimes a girl can be feeling unusually vulnerable, and what worked before won't work now and then. Be especially careful of her emotions in all intense play. And depending on someone's individual psyche, any kind of play that stirs emotions can skirt it's way into psychological edge play. That's why you need to talk about heavy stuff, before, and after.

Names

Dollie calls me "Daddy." the pet is not allowed to call me Daddy, because I am not her Daddy. This is a privilege reserved for Dollie, and it helps the pet know her place. (Very loved and very cared for by both Dollie and I, but definitely secondary to Dollie in my eyes. Not because the pet is lesser, but because Dollie is my *one*.)

the pet gets to call me "PoppyCat", and we all love this. (And I like the social pedigree of the term: Like "Daddy", "Poppy" can be vanilla-black or vanilla-Hispanic for "loverman.")

Long-Distance Three-Way Sex

Here's about the only thing I haven't tried yet that I describe in this book, but I plan to with Dollie and the pet next time I'm out of town:

When you have to leave town, have your beta spend the night with your alpha, and "direct" them sexually, via Webcam. This is going to happen, next time I'm flown out to lecture at some college about film-making, which I do frequently, as part of my day job. (If you don't have a webcam, do it via speakerphone.)



SWITCHING

Sort of related to "TRY IT ON YOURSELF", but more based on how you're wired, how you're *made* (which is determined by DNA, but also by upbringing and experiences).

This is advanced, and can be done with one girl or two. Basically a "switch" is someone who is a dominant sometimes, and a submissive other times. Sometimes a switch will be one thing with one partner, and the other with the another. Or sometimes two switches will take turns being the top and the bottom, often without a word, sort of the way that puppies play and bite each other: one will be on the bottom getting bitten and dominated, then another will gain control. This can be a lot of fun for humans.

What I do is once in a while I'll *tell* the girls to top me. I'm still in control, I'm still "directing", but I'm on my back, and they're on top and beside me, treating me like a little girl being fucked by two men. Sometimes this involves a fantasy of me being a girl. I'm like Ed Wood: I'm not gay, I'm straight, but wearing women's clothes once in a while makes me feel closer to the beauty that is women.

I'll dress up in a slip and pumps and stockings, and they'll fuck me with Flex-O-Pleasers or even a strap-on vibrating dick, sometimes it's with me being a guy, but being in a sweet, non-forceful mood, and I'm being "taken." But always, I'm in control, leading it. I can take a fake dick up the ass from a woman, but I'm still the man as far as maintaining the master hand with telling everyone who does what, to whom and when.

HOT WIFE CUMMIN' THROUGH!

From Wikipeda:

Hot Wife

The "term hot" wife refers to a married woman who has sex with men other than her spouse, with the husband's consent. In most cases the husbands take a vicarious pleasure in watching their wives' and the other male/s enjoyment, or enjoy watching, hearing, or knowing about their wives' adventures. Husbands may also take part by engaging in threesomes, or arranging dates for their wives.

One variant of the hot wife phenomenon is when two men...take turns pleasuring his wife, each immediately taking over from the other as soon as his orgasm is reached. In effect one man is



recovering while the other is active, but the woman effectively has continuous intercourse. In this way, particularly if the woman experiences multiple orgasms, this game can effectively provide her with a very extended sexual act that she could not experience in any other way.

Have them do each other while you recoup. OR, try the "hot wife" thing, swinger term for keeping a woman going all night long, with two or three men fucking her.

(I don't share my woman with any men, only with other women. My wife is *mine*.)

You can also "hot wife" your woman yourself. While you're waiting to be ready to want to fuck her again, rub her pussy, strap a vibrator to her pussy while she's tied up and leave it there, keep her cummin' one way or another.

This is from *Diary of an S&M Romance*:

Dollie and I wrote this to each other, early on in our relationship:

Daddy Wrote:

Would you suck a stranger's cock if I told you to?

Dollie Wrote:

Yes.

Daddy Wrote:

I probably won't, but the fact that you would makes me happy. Very. I love that you want to please me in every way, not just in sex. I wouldn't ask you to do anything stupid though...I hate those masters who try to limit the slave's access to their family, the ones who answer and filter their slave's e-mail, etc. I want you free, even though you're giving me latitude, hell, giving me everything.

HOLY-GOD-OF-FUCK-LEVEL RAINY DAY FUN ACTIVITIES

Here's a list of *Holy God of Fuck* stuff we like....It's rainy day fun (or everyday fun) for you and your girl. (Or for you, your girl and one of your other rainy day girls!)

Try the things on this list, see what works for you and your sweet bitch(es). Also use this list to inspire you to come up with more things



on your own. Enjoy!

A lot of the things on this list require a level of trust that does not happen on the first or even fifth fuck. These are activities to be discussed before hand, and you need to have proven to her over and over that you care for her, respect her, and most of all, RESPECT THE SACRED SAFEWORD!

Also, remember, TRY IT ON YOURSELF FIRST.

A NOTE ON PAIN PLAY

Pain play in BDSM isn't really isn't ordinary pain, it's transformed in the sexual context into endorphin overload pleasure for all parties involved. If you're wired for it, this is damn pleasurable.

Dollie wrote this in *Diary of an S&M Romance*:

"Pain. Most people go out of their way to avoid it. I'm not so different. I jump around when I drop something on my foot. I hate paper cuts, and headaches make me crazy. (I suffer from migraines and trust me, I find no joy in them.) But the quality of pain I experience in a "scene" (sex act/role playing scenario/day of sex) is not the same. Oh, it's every bit as intense, usually more so, but I love it. I crave it. It's not a random act of the Universe, it's a thoughtfully and lovingly applied sensation that awakens me to a consciousness and awareness I cannot find any other way. It strips away the layers of thought and responsibility, and leaves me a creature composed of nothing but feeling, existing only in the moment. In short, it frees me.

How often has your vanilla lovemaking been disrupted or diminished by concerns of things outside the bedroom? When I'm playing with sensations, there's no room in my head for anything else."

IMPACT PLAY

Impact play is striking your partner with an object. This can be a whip or cane on the ass, tits, or any other soft, fleshy part. If your partner and you are both into it, it's stupendous.

Can be done during sex, before or after sex, or even instead of sex. Impact play is a great endorphin rush, for the striker, and the strikee. And it's a cure for pain. When my wife was recovering from shoulder



surgery for a bone spur recently, after she got off the narcotics, and got on the non-narcotic pain pills (Tramadol, or as I call it, "Trampy Doll", which is also now a nickname for the wife), she was still in some pain. It came and went, but continued well into when she had to return to work, eight weeks after the surgery. We found that caning her on the ass while rubbing her pussy, then fucking her silly, then caning her more, made her not feel the pain. The body produces endorphins (nature's pain meds) during sex, and especially during rough sex with impact play (canings or even spankings). And that makes you feel happy and high. (Again, this is the reason people become "a lover, not a fighter" when they fuck a lot.)

You shouldn't just whack your partner when she's not ready. Start with light hits, and work up. What would feel like pain at first will feel like pleasure later as you build to harder.

NEVER hit your partner with any impact toy on the spine, kidneys, face or ears, as this can cause injury.

Impact play leaves bruises. They start out red, and turn purple over the coming days. Dollie loves her bruises, and pets them when she's home, and secretly in the bathroom at work (often while quietly masturbating on the toilet). She considers her bruises "nature's makeup", and signs of Daddy's love. And they are. Since impact play leaves bruises, and consensual bruises can be confused with abuse, it's best to only leave them places that will be covered with clothing when the slave is outside the house.

Canes made specifically for impact play are not large thick walking canes, they're thin, about a quarter-inch, and bend a bit when used. They have some "play." They're often made of rattan (a plant), but the really nasty ones are made out of fiberglass. The sound of a cane in the air makes the wife hot.

Dollie adds, "A car antenna makes a wonderfully evil pervertible whip."

There are all kinds of whips, from little "squid whips" (made of thin rubber strands) to very stingy bullwhips (also called "snake" and "single tail", though these are slightly different sizes of bullwhips). Bullwhips are used from a distance, and require a lot of room to practice. They should not be used without training and *a lot* of practice. (Some dungeons hold whipping classes.) Smart bullwhip enthusiasts practice on non-human objects (like pillows, or balloons) until they're comfortable



with doing it on a slave.

(Dollie adds, "A well-done whipping is stunning to watch.")

I prefer floggers (which have many strands of soft leather, but can leave a good mark, and have a more "thuddy" feel on the slave rather than the "stingy" feel of whips and canes. Used moderately, or even gently, a heavy flogger can almost massage the slave - very luxurious - and can be a really nice cool down, even part of the aftercare.

I also like slappers, which are about two feet long, have a handle and a flat leather end, and make a lot of noise. We have one small slapper (about a foot long) that we call the "slut slapper." It has the word "slut" embossed backwards on it, and if used properly, will temporarily "brand" the word "slut" on the slave for a couple of hours. (I like to do this on Dollie's inner thigh.)

Ball Gags

Ball gags are great, and cheap (try StockRoom.com). Putting a gag in a woman's mouth can be a great turn-on, for you and for her. It's about power exchange, it's about her feeling of being "taken against her will" (with permission). It's about you feeling that, even though out of the bed you respect the brilliant words that come out of her mind, for this snapshot of time, "I don't care what you fucking have to say, bitch, and I don't care to hear it! I just wanna fuck your pussy, and don't wanna hear a word out of you!" Ball gags also train a woman to have her mouth open for long periods of time, which makes them better cock-suckers, too.

Ball gags are rubber balls with little straps and a little buckle to strap around her head to hold the ball in place.

Since gags cut off air to the mouth, they should not be used with anyone who has trouble breathing through her nose, anyone who is epileptic, and you have to constantly watch her face to make sure she's not in trouble. And NEVER LEAVE ANYONE GAGGED, OR TIED UP, ALONE. EVER.

Since a gagged woman cannot give a verbal safeword, it's best to put a little bell in her hand. If she wants to safeword out, she jingles the bell. And if you've tied up her arms, having her blink repeatedly can serve as a safeword, but you have to really watch her closely. Pet squeeze toys work too, and have the added feature of being a little humiliating, but in a fun way.

Two-Girl Toe Suck



Have two bitches suck your toes, one on each foot, as you beat off. Or have one suck your toes while the other blows you. Either way will blow your mind with pleasure.

"HANDS AT YOUR SIDES!"

Covered briefly in Chapter Six, but here I'm suggesting you try it OUTSIDE the bed. Have your woman lean against the wall, say "HANDS AT YOUR SIDES!", and fondle her all over, without her being able to touch or push you away. Of course, you have to respect her safeword (as always), but it can be delicious for interrogation scenes, and "Daddy inspecting his girl", "Slave sale lineup" scenes, and just "dirty janitor with schoolgirl" scenes, things like that.

Tell her "hands against your sides!" make her stand up against the wall, and "inspect" her body with your hands...somewhere between a doctor's exam and someone buying a horse. Touch the merchandise. Finally, roll her panties down her legs, and play with her pussy. Then take her panties off, put them over your head so your eyes are not covered, but the crotch of the panties is over your nose. Then make her kneel and blow you.

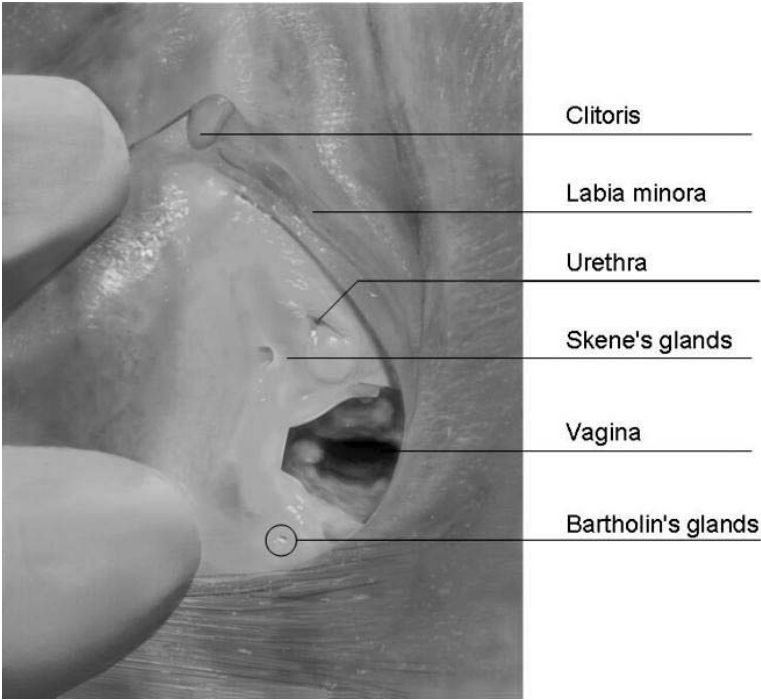
Female Ejaculation

This means "squirting liquid from the pussy at orgasm." Not all women do it, and Dollie only started doing it after she met me. It's incredibly sexy when a woman does it, and if you fuck a woman's brains out, she just might start being a squirter. You'll feel like the god you are.

Contrary to some people, female ejaculate is not pee. It is a sweet liquid called Skene's Fluid that actually contains a little bit of natural sugar, and it emulates not from the urethra, but from a different small hole alongside the vagina called the Skene's gland.

You can get more info on the Skene's gland here:
http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Skene%27s_gland

You can get more info on female ejaculation here:
http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Female_ejaculation



Vagina, showing the location of the Skene's gland (and the location of the clitoris, in case you don't know where that is)

This file is licensed under the Creative Commons Attribution-ShareAlike license version 2.5.

Image produced by Wikipedia user *Nicholasolan*

Basically the only thing you have to do to "deal with" squirters is fuck her on a towel. (For some reason we call these "squirt pillows", as in "Hey pet, go throw these swampy squirt pillows in the dryer and get more out of the cupboard.) And if she squirts a lot, like Dollie and the pet, keep a pile of towels handy. Our sober lost-weekend three-way sex and love marathons basically keep the clothes dryer running non-stop, from 5 PM on Friday 'til 10 PM on Sunday. Even with the squirt pillows, those bitches turn my mattress into the land of a thousand lakes. (Dollie and I joke about touring to teach love/life/sex/mind/body/self-improvement seminars based on this book and *Diary of an S&M Romance*, and calling the seminars: "Life Squirt.")

One time after I'd fucked Dollie's brains out, and she squirted a lot, she



said, "I know what Skene's fluid is made of: It's my brains!"

Blindfolding Asleep, Sleeping Tied Up

Very fun for making the woman feel loved. Blindfold her gently with a soft scarf (or the bottom of a slip), tuck her in like your little girl, and let her sleep like that.

You can tie your woman up to sleep, but only do this if she can get out if she needs to, and if you tie her in a way that will not hurt if she's there for eight hours. A loose leg cuff with a rope tied to an eyehook on the wall is good. She can get out if she needs to, if she has to pee, or if there's a fire. Never leave her tied up alone, awake or asleep. Sleep next to her, so she knows she's safe.

Blindfold Porn

Blindfold her and have her blow you while you watch porn.

Face Slapping

Face Slapping is intense. Some women love it, some will never love it. If your woman has issues with it, DON'T DO IT. And even if she likes it, it has to be timed right. You don't want to slap her when she walks in the door. Slapping her face when she's about to cum, or when she's cumming, is best, and will intensify the experience for both of you.

BONDAGE, ADVANCED.

Tying Up Two Legs, Two Arms, Four-Point Restraint, and Hogtying

Fun. Exciting. Use leg cuffs (available from Stockroom.com) or a belt. Tie her up and fuck her, or tie her up and play with her. It shows her mind and body that she has turned control TOTALLY over to you. And it's hella fun to play with a woman's body when she has turned that trust over, you can do whatever you like to her, and she cannot do anything but lie there and take it, with love.

Dollie loves to be tied up and have me hit her ass with a cane until it leaves little welts. She cums from this.

Whole books could be written on bondage. In fact, whole books *have* been. We recommend *Jay Wiseman's Erotic Bondage Handbook*:

<http://www.amazon.com/Jay-Wisemans-Erotic-Bondage-Handbook/dp/1890159131/>



ANAL PLAY

(Note: as with anything in this book, try this at your own risk.)

As I've said, the anus is a conduit to the infinite. It's the area of one of the charkas (the Muladhara charka). Fucking a woman in the ass can be the most divinely masterfully transcendent sex you'll ever have. And having her play with the inside of your asshole can take you to beautiful places you will totally dig, if you aren't afraid to take that journey. Because, unlike women, men have a prostate, which is like a male G-spot or clit.

Her buttohole (and yours, if you're wired that way), can provide amazing bliss for everyone involved. There are a few precautions though.

CLEAN IT OUT. You'll want to give the receiving partner (her, or you) an enema before play. Buttholes are fun, but poo, in my opinion, isn't.

To give a good enema, you don't want to use those little disposable kits they sell in the drugstore. First, they're expensive on a per-use basis. Second, they don't contain much liquid. Third, the liquid contains stuff that irritates your bowels to make you poop, which is not the goal. Those things are made for people who have trouble pooping, not for people who want the poop out of the way.

I recommend if you're serious about advanced anal play that you invest in a good reusable enema kit. I like this one, which sells for 40 bucks: <http://www.amazon.com/Professional-Quart-Enema-Bag-Kit/dp/B000VGIDIE>

It comes with a few nozzles, so each person can have their own to use.

Basically, you fill the bag with warm (*NOT HOT*) water, hang the bag above the toilet, sit on the toilet, and lube up the nozzle, and stick a little lube in your buttohole. (You may get some poo on your finger, just swish it off in the toilet bowl by reaching between your legs.) Then release the clamp on the hose that controls the water flow for a second to clear air from the hose, then insert the nozzle up your butt a few inches (not *WAY* up your butt). Wiggle and enjoy.

Your anus will fill with a warm feeling as the water squirts inside you. It's very very pleasant, even just on it's own, without additional play.

So, once you fill up as much as you can, close the clamp, and let your ass release the water and poo into the toilet. Flush. Repeat until no more poo comes out. This can take a couple minutes, or over a half hour, depending on your body. Be careful not to overfill your bowels.



Cramping may occur, though it passes.

Now you (or whoever you're doing this to) are ready for the big fun....

Anal Sex

What more do I need to say? Anal sex is great, and without the fear of a poo accident or mess, it's absolutely awesome. Put a towel on your bed in case any liquid or errant poo leaks out. After giving her an enema (or having her give herself one), get her ready in whatever way you normally would, then lube up her ass and your cock, and go to town. But start a little gentle, put it in about an inch, pull it out a half inch, and increase depth until you're all the way in, then pause for a moment and ask her if it hurts. If not, proceed. If so, pull out.

She has to be really relaxed and also turned on and also trust you. Some women like anal a lot more than others. With women (or with yourself) who like it, but have a bit of pain, start by just inserting a very thin vibrator, or even your finger, and work up to bigger toys and your cock. "Anal training" like this can build people up to take really large things up their ass and love it, with time.

One thing Dollie really likes is me fucking her in the ass, missionary style, then after she cums, pulling my cock out and sticking it in her pussy, and going back and forth between both. With some women this can lead to yeast infections, but Dollie has no problem with it.

Insertion Play, Vaginal and Anal

Things up the pussy or the butt. Or both. Vibrators, fingers, dildos, vegetables, etc. Really fun, especially if you put stuff up her ass while fucking her pussy with your cock (or vice versa).

When you're done playing and go to remove objects, sometimes they're hard to remove, because the thrusting into the anus has produced a vacuum. Just relax, don't fight it, sit over the toilet, take some deep breaths, and "shit" the toy out.

DO NOT insert anything that could break and cut (like bottles or a glass), or puncture (like a pencil or screwdriver), and DO NOT insert anything that could get lost up there, something with no handle, like a golf ball or iPod. You don't want to have to go to the hospital for something up your ass. (But if you DO lose something up your ass, go to the hospital. They won't have to cut you open, they've got drugs to relax you, and trained medical professionals with tools for exactly this purpose.)



I've lost something up my butt, had to go to the emergency room, and they took care of it. And they didn't seem surprised at all. (But then again, the E.R. that I went to for this issue was in San Francisco.)

Butt Plugs

Tapered rubber or silicon toys that go in the butthole, but have a large end so they cannot get lost up there. Available in various sizes. Start with a small one and work up, over a period of days or weeks.

Dollie adds: "Have her wear a butt plug while doing chores. Or once she's used to it, out in public, hidden by her clothes. She will spend every second aware of who *owns* her ass."

Vibrating Robo-Whore

The Stockroom sells an item so delicious that it's a sin not to own one if you're into anal play. "The Expanding Vibrating Anal Plug", only 26 dollars.

<http://www.stockroom.com/Expanding-Vibrating-Anal-Plug-P210.aspx>

Dollie and I first encountered this amazing solution for modern living when penelope came over to do a medical exam scene with us. (This was recorded, and is episode 100 of Submission and Coffee:

http://www.askdollie.com/SAC-100_SUBURBAN_SWINGER_BONDAGE_MORESOME.mp3

This toy is a vibrating butt plug with a pump, you put it up the butt, pump it up to up to the size of an orange, and turn on the vibrator. Exquisite. The pump has a quick release so you can get it out if you're overwhelmed, or if you put in too much air and want the thing a little smaller.

I like to put it up Dollie's ass and then fuck her in the pussy. She loves it, and I love it too. I can feel the vibrations on my cock through the wall between her rectum and pussy. I like to say it turns her into a vibrating robo-whore.

Fisting

Fisting is advanced play. Fisting is putting your whole fist up the recipient's vagina or ass. It's not a first date thing, and should only be done after the slave has been anally trained to take other large objects.

Before fisting, or even putting a finger in anyone's body, you should trim your nails. Not so short that they bleed, and allow any remaining poo to get in your blood, but short enough that they don't scrape the fistee's colon. (I make Dollie keep her nails short because I like her to



put a finger or two up my ass while she blows me.) You should remove any rings, bracelets or watches, and use a lot of lube.

I'd recommend fisting the pussy first, and if she likes that, try the asshole next.

Start with one finger, use lots of lube, and slowly insert, and push it in and pull it out. Add more lube and work up to three fingers. Stop if there's any pain in the fistee. (There probably won't be with the pussy, but might be with the ass.) Then pull your fingers out, gently. Add more lube. Begin with your fingers together, in a point. Once you're inside and all's still well, make a fist. Move in and out gently, without withdrawing completely. GO SLOW, in a bit, out a bit, in a bit, out a bit. It can help if you're rubbing her clit with your other hand, and/or talking gently and/or dirty to her.

Once it's up there, very slowly rotate your hand a little. If she's still comfortable, move your fist in and out, slowly, and keep abreast of any signs of pain. If she safewords out, or if you decide to stop, pull out slowly, not suddenly. You can work up to fast thrusts if she likes it.

Some women like to be fisted while lying on their back, others on all fours. Discuss and experiment to find the key with your girl. And if you want, have her try it on you. Being blown (for men or women) while being fisted is mindblowing. Fisting, when done right, with your well-trained anal slave, can be some of the most earth-shattering orgasms she'll ever have. She'll feel like you're petting her heart from the inside.

Some people find fisting more enjoyable with the fister wearing disposable latex gloves. You can buy them cheap, in boxes of 50, at the drugstore. (Remember what we said about *latex allergies* back in Chapter Five, and use non-latex gloves if you or your partner(s) are allergic.)

Super advanced: double-fisting, i.e. one hand in the ass and the other in the pussy.

Occasionally, advanced anal play of any type can produce a little blood. When this happens, I just stop, and don't do any anal play for about four days. If the bleeding persists more than a day, I'd go to my doctor or the E.R.

Other Fun Buttplay

Your thumb or finger up her asshole as you're fucking her, with your other hand rubbing clit. This takes some balance and practice, as a lot of these techniques do.



Felching

Felching is sucking cum out of her asshole after you fuck her in the ass. Or you can fuck one bitch in the ass and make the other girl suck the cum out. Or you can suck it out yourself.

ACCIDENTS

Sometimes with anal play, even after a good enema, some poo will come out. Don't freak out. Just be a man, scoop up the towel, go dump it in the toilet, wash it out by hand, and throw it in the washer. Or have her do that, while she's in there cleaning herself up. Or you can clean her up. If you're sweet about it, and don't make her feel bad about a natural accident, she'll love you even more for being a good, loving, understanding Daddy. Let her remember the glory of the majestic sex, not the disappointment of a small mess.

FUCKING THE SHIT OUT OF A WOMAN

Sometimes if you fuck a woman really really hard in the pussy, a little poo will come out of her butthole. This can happen whether or not there's been anal play. It can especially happen 4-24 hours after anal play. The colon is a flowing river, and an enema only cleans out the bottom of the colon, and it fills up. (Quicker with some people. We're all individuals here.)

Older women, especially women who've had a few kids, are especially susceptible to this. Again, keep your calm, don't make her feel bad, and it will be all good. And revel in the fact that you have to be a damn spirited fuck to fuck the shit out of a woman.

Women (or anyone) interested in advanced anal play should carry an extra pair of panties or underwear in their purse or backpack, in case an accident occurs while you're out of the house, after heavy anal play. In this event, take some paper towels into a bathroom stall, remove the soiled panties, wrap them in the paper towels. Wash your butt with toilet water (it's pretty clean, don't worry) and wipe well and dry your ass with toilet paper. Then put on the new panties, and toss the old ones, wrapped in paper towels, in the trash as you leave.

OOPSES

This brings us to the subject of "oopses." Sometimes something will go wrong. Physically (I've accidentally smacked Dollie in the ear with my hand a few times, leaving an unpleasant ringing) or emotionally (mindfuck gone wrong comes to mind, more on mindfucks below). When they happen, stop what you're doing, talk it over, make sure everyone feels OK before proceeding, and live and learn.

A wise man once gave this advice to subs looking for doms: "Ask a potential dom if he's ever made any mistakes in play. If he says 'No',



run away, because he's lying."

Age Play, and Daddy/Daughter play

Where the dominant partner pretends to be older, and submissive partner pretends to be much younger. Does not have to link directly to the actual ages of the people, but sometimes does (especially with middle-aged doms who have barely legal subs).

Age play is not an actual desire for pedophilia or incest. It's more about the sub feeling vulnerable, but feeling protected, so she gives that vulnerability to the "Daddy" to do with as he pleases. Dollie is my baby girl and I'm her Daddy, even though she's biologically five years older than me.

Can be a 24/7 arrangement, like Dollie and I, or can be a one-off or recurrent but not 24/7 fantasy role playing game. Often when Dollie and I play with the pet, I make the pet wear pigtails and little ruffled socks and patent leather shoes and a slip. The pet is five years younger than me, but can be made to look a lot younger. We pretend that Dollie and I are an old biker couple (Dollie has a lot of tattoos) and the pet is a teenaged girl (for sake of argument, let's say, um, 18) that we picked up hitchhiking and took to a cheap motel and took advantage of. Would be creepy as a reality, but is yummy as a three-way consensual fantasy play game.

24/7 vs. non-24/7

In BDSM, 24/7 means "full-time slave." This usually includes living together, and also the slave serving the master in AND out of the bed. It may or may not include the master supporting the slave financially. (It does not with me and Dollie, she works outside the home, has a great job, and makes more money than me. But I work, a lot, and we share everything.)

A collared slave is usually a 24/7 slave, yet a slave can be 24/7 without being collared. (Especially if she's "under consideration" which means "trial basis to see if it works well enough" to collar her.)

There are also non-24/7 BDSM relationships, that may or may not include service outside the bed. Some women just like to be tied up and fucked, but don't want to wait on anyone. It's all good.

OTK Spanking and OTK Fingering



"OTK" means "over the knee", as in spanking a woman with you sitting in a chair or on the bed and with her over your knee, with her ass pointing upward, for your spanking pleasure. This is a beautiful perversion of antiquated actual punishment techniques. Parents use to do this to their children as punishment. (When I see the way the world is going and how psychotic the youth of today are becoming as a group, I kind of think more parents need to bring this back.)

OTK spanking (with or without diddling her pussy and butthole) is fun, can seem a little sweet, and is a popular element in many people's Daddy/daughter play.

I spank my baby out of love, and she loves it. There's no real punishment for my baby, only reward. (Though I will verbally correct her if she displeases me, but that's very rare, and I always keep it separate from any sex play, to keep our sex play pure.)

Medical Play

Medical play is "playing doctor", but not like when we were kids. It's an extended scene where one person plays the "patient" and one or more play the doctor and/or nurse. It sometimes involves an "outline" (not really a script, but a description of events, background, etc.). Medical play involves the "patient" becoming very turned on by submitting to various "procedures" that would be very invasive in normal life. (Like being felt up inside the pussy by a stranger, or someone pretending to be a stranger. Or just being examined by a doctor.)

Medical play can be light, fun and sweet, or can venture into scary exciting mindfuck territory. (Think "Doctor molesting patient." Or "Nazi doctor torturing prisoner.")

Again, listen to episode 100 of Submission and Coffee (URL above, under "Vibrating Robo-Whore" heading) to hear a really fun medical play scene, with penelope as patient, me as doctor, and Dollie as nurse. (This scene also involved a tiny bit of "mind fuck" - more on those soon - in the form of our outline calling for her to be a woman who cannot stop fucking strangers in alleyways, and me as "doctor" asking way too many personal questions, while "examining" her all over, then "taking advantage of the patient" while she was "under general anesthesia." (We did not actually drug her, but pretended to administer a sedative, while she was blindfolded. She had to hold herself still, regardless of what we did to her, to maintain this fantasy. This was discussed and agreed to ahead of time.)

An extension of medical play is psychiatric play, where the dom is the psychiatrist, and the sub is the patient. It can border on mind fuck, and



should be done with care and trust. It could possibly even create some true breakthroughs, but as with any "therapy" expect the possibility of tears, and have some tissues handy. And also consider all the ramifications of "fucking the patient", that can be a lot heavier with this than simple medical play.

Wearing disposable rubber gloves adds a good bit of tactile realism for both the doctor and the patient in medical play scenes. Also, doing some research on medical sites and learning some doctor lingo can help for added fun.

Mind Fucks

Mind fucks (also spelled "mindfucks") are scenes that involve consensually taking the sub to a kind of dark place. It's controlled fear, for the purpose of generating arousal for both parties. This can include interrogation fantasy play, rape fantasy play, or yelling things beyond "you dirty little slut" (that many women dig) to things that kind of cross a lot of lines with a lot of people, like "You are a worthless piece of shit." I don't do this particular kind of mind fuck.

I do like rape play, which can be a trip into the dark side for some people. But with us, it's always done with love. Basically you both agree ahead of time that a rape scenario will be played out, and the woman will resist. (It's REALLY important to pay attention to the safeword if used, because in rape play, saying "NO! STOP IT RIGHT NOW!" and things like that are often part of the fun.) Some women love rape play, others (often those who have actually *been* raped in the past) dislike it. Though some women have used rape play with a loving partner to actually overcome emotional damage caused by an actual rape in her past.

(This next part is a piece on rape play written by a fan of ours named Illustrated Tart, about her loving rape play with her master. We really like her writing):

RAVISHMENT

Ravishment / rape-play/ consensual non-consent. It's not everyone's kink. I don't mean to trigger anything for anyone who has had the misfortune of experiencing real sexual assault. But as a woman who loves this type of play, I'm going to discuss it a bit.

Do I want actual rape? Good lord no! But it's a fantasy, a sick fantasy that plays into my "fighting submissive" tendencies. It's safe to play out the fantasy with someone I trust and love as



much as Sir.

Safety is a huge part of this. I feel safe with Sir. I know I can stop everything in a second by safe-wording; I'll get cuddled and we'll talk through my feelings or I'll get space as I need it. I know Sir isn't about to hurt me, there isn't any anger focused at me, we're playing roles.

What do I find attractive about ravishment? I like the amount of physical force used, the particular brand of dirty talk that comes with it, the moments I feel so desperately weak are very cathartic for me. The fantasy also taps into an interesting ego trip - I'm that attractive and desirable that Sir has to demand my attention *right at that moment*. No matter how I "feel" or how much I "protest" and "fight", that he is willing to overpower me and *have* me.

Is he actually raping me? No! Far from it. It's just fun to act out every now and again. "Submissive" is a real part of my personality, "rape victim" is a role (acting!) I choose to take on every now and again for our mutual enjoyment. I know the idea of taking on "rape victim" as a role for enjoyment seems pretty disturbing. An interesting comparison would be dressing up as a serial killer for Halloween and hitting your friends with the fake plastic knife that came with your costume. Does the costume, dark jokes, and moments of pretend make you a legendary fictional serial killer? Hardly. It's fun to play a disturbing role sometimes, even if you find the real-life act to be completely detestable.

Ravishment is where sexual objectification, violence, humiliation and degradation all come to a peak for me, and I enjoy it. There is also a relief for me if I eventually start to "give in" to his attentions. (Do you have any idea how hard it is not to enthusiastically thrust back while having sex in a scene like this?!) If I do "give in" and "begin" to enjoy it, it feels like this amazing rush of pure animalistic lust because I've just fully given in to the sensation, regardless of context. It's like plunging into cold water, it's such a rush.

Sir is always very tender with me afterward, making sure I'm OK, and that I liked it. A lot of cuddling and generally being cute ensures.

The Dom/me is doing the scene for mutual enjoyment by playing the selfish bastard role. I'm impressed by Dom/mes who engage in ravishment. I can't imagine the courage that must



take, to not be paralyzed by the concern not to harm, to somehow make it work.

After the first time Sir and I played with this fantasy, I felt so loved and safe that he was willing to do this with me. He trusted me enough to know my own boundaries (and that I'd enforce them) just as much as I trusted him not to really hurt me. It was a great experience.

—Illustrated Tart

<http://www.underthisbenevolentdictatorship.blogspot.com/>

One of me and Dollie's favorite mindfucks is "good girl/bad girl." There's a couple ways to do this. You can play sexually with your woman while alternating between saying very sweet things to her (usually in a quiet voice) and then suddenly shift to saying really mean or humiliating things (usually in a loud voice). A variation on this is to do it with two women, often alternating between who gets to be the good girl and who gets to be the bad girl.

Getting *quieter* (especially while getting closer and looking into her eyes in a reptilian, cold manner) for the "bad girl" lines can often be more of a mind fuck than yelling loudly. Or switch it up, and do quiet bad girl and loud good girl. It's all good.

I don't enter the realm of mindfucking that often, but when I do, it can be tasty. Dollie and I have had several successful and fun mindfuck scenes, and we've had a couple great ones with the pet, too. However, we don't usually record mind fucking (it's almost *too* personal, and that's saying a lot from a couple who records and podcasts the stuff we do.)

The only recorded mind fuck we have so far is actually one that went really bad, and made both girls feel crappy. That episode is here, if you dare:

"CREEPY MINDFUCK SEX FOR TAX DAY"

http://www.askdollie.com/SAC-141-CREEPY_MINDFUCK_SEX_FOR_TAX_DAY.mp3

Me and Dollie and the pet talked about the "mind fuck gone wrong" after, and recovered, and also podcasted that, because after all, "Submission and Coffee" is a "teaching hospital", and we don't just show when things are nifty. We feel this is important to being a truly educational BDSM resource.

HUMILIATION PLAY

Humiliation play is sort of like mindfucking, but can be sweeter in a



way. (And Dollie adds: "Any humiliation play can feel like a mindfuck in the right frame of mind, or before you have experience with it. I cried the first time I let Daddy do some things to me that I now love.")

The humiliation play in BDSM that Dollie and I like isn't really true humiliation, it's transformed in the sexual context into endorphin overload pleasure for all parties involved. Still, you have to be very careful and respectful with the mind and soul of your sub, and proceed with caution into any humiliation play areas, and discuss them ahead of time, and also afterwards, with her.

Dollie wrote this in *Diary of an S&M Romance*:

Relinquishing power over myself to Daddy is another type of freedom. When he yanks me by the hair and throws me to the bed, I don't have to worry if he likes what I'm doing - I *know*. When he tells me what to wear, to shut up and be quiet or go stand in the corner, I have no pressure, no need to decide or act. I know he's getting what he wants - he made the decisions. I have an inherent need to be pleasing to him, and when he's in control I have no performance anxieties.

I love being called a slut, but I hate being told in seriousness "You are a bad girl. You are dirt", etc. Daddy is respectful of this, and does not do true humiliation. Any humiliation scenes we do are all play and beauty and joy for both of us.

Being Daddy's slave also enhances all the little things I love to do for him. Cooking, massaging his feet, fetching this or that, even making the bed once he's finished using me, are all transmogrified into subservient, subtly sexy acts done for his pleasure. Which makes me enjoy them more, and removes the humdrum from the ordinary. I never worry that the things I do are taken for granted since I know he sees them from the dominant flip side. Daddy says women were put on this Earth to serve men. But before you accuse him of misogyny, let me assure you he is absolutely not guilty. He loves and adores women.

One of the most startling (to me) powers I gave to Daddy was the power to play humiliation games with me. I have always been very protective of my occasionally brittle self-esteem, and humiliation was a game I had rarely played.

I believe everyone has their own ideas of what they find humiliating. Some couldn't conceive of crawling on their knees, but I love that. It doesn't touch my sense of self-worth to do so. In fact, it plays to my feeling of joy in submission to bow down to



the man in control. I have my own hot buttons: body image, bodily functions, face slapping. Understand that many of the powers I have granted Daddy have profound implications for me.

Also, just because I told him he could do these things doesn't mean it was easy for me. There's something in Daddy that makes it almost impossible for me to say "no." I can't say how much is attributable to my love for him and need to please him, my insecurity that I could lose him if I refuse him, his very infectious charisma, or the trust I have in him. It's a combination of all these things, certainly.

Here's some examples of fun humiliation play:

Giving her an enema (after she gives herself one to clean herself out) on the toilet, while saying "Bad little girl, sitting on the toilet for Daddy. You're a filthy little slut who needs her butthole cleaned out because it's so full of the cum of a hundred men! You're a sullied little cock toy that needs extra cleaning, because you're so filthy!" Then stick your cock in her mouth while she's still on the toilet.

For added humiliation, you can take pictures of all this, and/or let your friends watch. (Or even participate. More on that soon.)

Letting your friends watch you play with your slave can be intense, I have heard. I've never done it, I don't like men around while I play. But I guess I do "let my friends watch" (and several thousand strangers, too), in audio form, with each Submission and Coffee episode.

As for photographing your sub, it can have humiliating aspects (possibly in a good way, if she's wired like that), or if you're like me and Dollie, it's just a exhibitionistic thrill.

With photos, don't break her trust, be careful to whom and where you show the photos. And consider cropping out her face, or just taking photos without her face (I do that all the time with Dollie, and with Dollie and the pet).

Another fun thing is make her clean out the cat box in bra and panties and pumps, and then slap her ass and rub her pussy and call her a "dirty girl" while she does. I do this with Dollie and with the pet.

Make her vacuum the house in bra and panties and pumps, and then slap her ass and rub her pussy and call her a "good girl" while she



does. Dollie adds, "A fun variation is to sit on the couch and masturbate while she vacuums and cleans the house. If she does a good job, allow her to finish you in her mouth, or lick up your cum.

Food fuck – stuff food in her mouth and make her eat while you're fucking her. Plays into the body image issues that all women have (thanks to the evil fashion industry). Food fucks are especially good if you're fattening up a skinny girl.

Making Her Fuck Other People

This is beyond advanced. Should only be done with a girl you know and love, and **know that she's into this**. Requires absolute trust. (And there's the issue of increasing chances of VD the more partners either of you have. So use condoms if you don't know their history. Hell, use condoms for this anyway.)

One of the hottest pieces of porn I've ever seen was only about a minute long. It was this: Young (20 or so) cute, plumpish slave girl, laying on a bed, naked except a dog leash and collar. Older (about 45), not very attractive master walks in naked, unceremoniously opens the girl's legs, fucks her for about 30 seconds and cums. OK, kinda neat, but barely "fucking her brains out." Then he says "Later tonight it won't be so easy. There will be four or five of my buddies doing that to you." She suddenly looks really happy and says "Cool!" (Of course she does...she needs that after his tiny little man fuck.)

One of the hottest things I've ever seen in real life was once when Dollie and I were at a dungeon (private members-only space for BDSM play), two doms who knew each other were talking nearby. One had a new slave, and the other had the slave he'd been with for years. The doms hugged, made some small talk, then the guy offered to have his new slave lick the other guy's slave's pussy. The second dom agreed, and the first dom ordered his slave to do it, and she did. I loved that the women had no say in the matter, but only because the fact that they'd agreed ahead of time to be slaves for these men, the women had obviously agreed that this was within the things they'd do. All four people looked really happy about the whole thing.

Make your slave blow a stranger (male or female)

Especially fun if one is skinny, pretty and young, and one is fat, less pretty and/or older.

Oral Slave For Others / Anal Slave For Others / Fingerbang Slave / Gangbang Slave

Can work as punishment or reward, depending on the woman. This requires an immense amount of trust, a very filthy woman, or both. **Do not attempt these unless your slave is comfortable with this**



type of activity/punishment/reward.)

Take her to a dungeon or swing party, and make her spend the evening either:

Blowing strangers (men and women) without getting fucked, or licking the buttoles of strangers (men and women) without getting fucked in the pussy, only in the ass. Also possibly fun: Take her to a dungeon or swing party, blindfold her, and line up a gang bang of men she'll never even see. You might even be one of them. Ask her later if she knows!

Or just tell strangers "You can finger her pussy and squeeze her tits, but you can't do anything else to her." All those unknown probing fingers in her pussy will have interesting effects. Might be fun too to blindfold her first.

SWING PARTIES

Swing parties are events held (usually by middle-aged people, and usually in the suburbs) to "wife swap." You pay a fee to enter. Single women often get in free, and couples usually pay less than single men. The hosts usually limit the number of single men admitted in a given night. Basically the idea is to have sex with a lot of strangers in one evening. Dollie used to go to them before she really got into BDSM and her search for the perfect master, which turned out to be me.

Despite what a lot of vanilla people think, "swingers" as they're called, are often *not* very kinky, at least not "kink" in the BDSM sense that I use it. They aren't usually into power exchange or bondage or dom/sub master/slave dynamics. They just like to fuck. But a swing party can be a good place to take your slave if you're both into the idea of having your "hot wife" sub being "lent out to strangers", and you can watch, or participate, or at least stay close by, to make sure she's safe.

Things rarely get out of hand at these parties, they are monitored closely by the people who run them, and people are quickly thrown out if they're being pushy or belligerent. Dungeons are the same way.

A note on dressing to go somewhere to have sex: You don't want to show up at a dungeon, swing party or someone's house wearing sex clothes that attract attention. Keep that shit "out of the streets where it might frighten the horses" (or the vanillas). Either bring your sex gear (clothes and toys) in a zippable bag and dress there, or wear a tasteful overcoat (easier to pull off for women).

If you are a bisexual male, you'll probably feel more at home in a dun-



geon than at a swing party. Dungeons are often more open to male/male bisexuality, which is often frowned upon at swing parties. Swingers can tend to be a little biased toward only digging female/female bisexuality.

Spitting:

On her face, tits, belly. Not out of anger, but just out of fun. Some chicks love this. Ask yours if she does, and start with her pussy or tits before trying the face, to gauge how she reacts. Some girls like the faux-degradation of being spit on, for others, it just feels like being squirted with sperm. Or both.

Scent and Panty Play

I like having women's panties and clothes around. I like my bed smelling of perfume and pussy. This doesn't make you less of a man, it makes you MORE of a man.

Make her wear panties for three days to get them really sniffable, and make her leave them when she leaves. Later, sniff them while you beat off, or make another girl sniff them while you fuck her. (They'll smell great for between three and seven days. Then you trade back and get fresh sniff-panties from the girl when she returns.)

While fucking two girls, make the girls sniff each other's panties, and trade panties.

While fucking two girls, rub both of their pussies, one with each hand, cover your hands with pussy juice, then wipe the pussy juice from each girl on the other girl's tits, belly, face, or pussy.

When the pet can't come over for more than three weeks, I make her mail me some panties that she's worn for a few days, as a homework assignment. That holds me until she gets back to the Internet.

Blindfold or gag your girl with her panties, or the other girl's panties. Make her sniff her panties. Make her sniff another girl's panties (with the other girl present, or not). Stuff panties (hers or the other girl's panties) in her mouth. Make her lick your (clean) buttohole, during other sexual stimulation, or just any time. And you can lick her buttohole. It's all good.

Fuck her bent over a toilet. Stuff her panties in her mouth and call her your "dirty little sperm toilet" as you do. Make her sit on the toilet and "think about what you've done." Beat off, or have her blow you on the toilet, or not. Then walk away. Come back after a while and walk her to the bed and kiss her all over and hug and pet her.



Fake Cum

Some women love cum, love a man (or men) to cum on them, in them, in all their holes and more. If you have a girl that loves this, perhaps she'll dig fake cum, which can be made in quantities that are not possible for one man (or even ten men) to produce. We like mixing hand lotion, lube and a tiny bit of water. Start by mixing a condom full of it and pouring it onto her slip while you fuck her. Make her wear the cum-stained slip around the house. Work up in quantity and creativeness from there.

Real Cum

After I cum in Dollie's puss, I don't let her blot it off or clean up sometimes. I'll make her go cook dinner in her slip and pumps with my seed running down her leg. Dollie adds, "Or rub it on my tits and face, or let me lick it off your fingers if I've been an especially good girl. Yum! Daddy cum!"

Pee on her

Not humiliation in our case. Just fun. A lot of times when Dollie's in the shower getting ready for work, I wake up to pee, hear her in the shower and walk in her room. She smiles, sits on the floor and masturbates while I pee all over her. She cums, thanks me, and washes off. I smile and go back to bed.

WOMEN AS FURNITURE, WOMEN AS OBJECTS, WOMEN AS ART

Sounds offensive, but isn't, if the woman is into it, and many are. Basically, it's using your woman as an object, literally. After you're done fucking her, have her kneel on all fours and put your feet up on her. Or actually write ON the bitch. Write "bitch" or "sweetie" or something else on her naked body with Magic Markers. Or, decorate her with Xmas decorations and have her stand in the corner. It's fun, as I said, if she's into it. It's not degrading, it's beautiful.

Get creative. Make art out of her. Show her off to your friends (keeping in mind any boundaries she has about being shown off...these need to be respected).

I wrote notes for much of this book while fucking Dollie. I'd keep a little sticky note pad and a pen on the bed. When I got a great idea, I'd slow my fucking, and write on the notepad using her chest as a table. When I filled one sticky note, I'd stick it on the bottom of her high heel, which is facing me at just about the right angle for that when I'm fucking her missionary style.



OTHER FUN STUFF:

Fucking one girl then the other. Fucking one hole, then the other. Two men and one girl...a cock in her mouth and a cock in her anus. Some women love this, particularly plump women, because plump women love food, and with this kind of sex, both ends of the food tube are being fucked. Delightful. (I don't share my bitch, but enjoy fantasies of swing parties and slave auction party tryouts. Sometimes I tell her and incorporate it into our dirty talk, sometimes I keep it in my head if I'm feeling verbally lazy.)

Fucking her doggie style with a leash on her. Leash, with or without doggie style, in or out of sex. Rubbing a rough sparkle material leash on clit...sort of like light sandpaper.

Collaring

Related to leashes, but "collaring" in BDSM means a ceremony of putting a collar on the woman to make her your property. Sort of like a marriage in the vanilla world. Dollie is my collared slave, and was well before we got legally married.

Collaring is a complex proposition, should be thought out, and discussed, and would take too much space to tell you everything that Dollie and I can think of on the subject. If you're interested in collaring a woman, I recommend you read *Diary of an S&M Romance*.

EDGE PLAY

"Edge Play" means both playing with sharp-edged objects, like knives, and also "anything that's consensual, but not always physically and/or emotionally safe." And any play that fits the first definition also fits within the second, larger, definition. Edge play is also called "RACK" for "Risk-Aware Consensual Kink" (as opposed to SSC or "Safe, Sane and Consensual", which describes most of what I like to do).

Edge play can include, but is not limited to, knife play, needle play, blood play, scat (shit) play, breath play (controlled asphyxiation), extreme humiliation play, extended sensory deprivation, and more. I don't do knife and needle play, and can't really speak to it, except to say **PROCEED WITH CAUTION, WITH ANY EDGE PLAY. And while no BDSM should ever be attempted while intoxicated on anything, that goes triple for Edge Play. Someone could die.**

If you are very experienced with non-edge play BDSM, and want to proceed, and have discussed all of the ramifications with your partner, and she's 100% into it, I'd recommend starting here:

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Edge_play



There is precious little in the way of published books about safer and saner edge play. I recommend searching the forums at <http://mydungeonspace.com/> and <http://triskelionsociety.com> (Both great sites in general, and basic membership is free.) Also, while I don't recommend Bondage.com for anything else (now that Penthouse bought them out and whittled away the soul of the site, as well as removing most of what free members can do on there), there are years of pre-Penthouse forum postings on Bondage.com, on any BDSM subject you can imagine, including edge play. Keep in mind, anything written is just one person's opinion, many contradict each other, and your mileage may vary. Still, it's a good place to start to research any BDSM idea.

The BDSM U part of that site is also still useful, for any basic info on anything:
<http://www.bondage.com/bdsm/bdsmu/overview.html>
and here's a short but good essay on edge play, written by Baadmaster, a cool friend of ours who we know in real life:
<http://www.bondage.com/bdsm/EdgePlay/i/17/article.html>

Extremely Advanced Anal Play

I almost consider this "anal edge play", because it can be dangerous, and can produce blood. But I love to do it, have been doing it to myself once or twice a week for decades, and my doctor says my prostate is fine. (Keep in mind, anal play, especially this kind, should not be done before a prostate exam, as it will make the prostate look a little larger than usual. On the male, the prostate is a very sensitive bunch of nerves, sort of like an internal male clit or G-spot.)

The anal edge play I like to do (to myself, and to others) involves doing normal anal play – an enema, then some insertion play to warm up, but then adding mucus-membrane irritants to the mix. This gives a burning sensation that can produce an incredible amount of endorphins. I usually use a bit of Tiger Balm or toothpaste or hot sauce, put it on an insertable, and stick it in. This, again, should only be done at your own risk, and you should start with a very tiny amount (especially with Tiger Balm, which is very potent).

It's advisable to quickly wash out with an enema after doing this. And any anal irritants will increase the chance of "poop oopses."

LUBE SHOOTERS

Lube shooters are little syringe-type things (with no needle, of course) for pumping about a tablespoon (a lot!) of lube up the ass (or up the



pussy). Makes anal play a lot more fun, easy, and pervy. Has the physical effect of making entry smoother, but also has a psychological component: the internal wetness that she can *feel* slushing up her butt makes her *mentally* totally ready for anal use.

They're great for medical play scenes, too. You can make it part of the "script." Pretend it's a medically indicated procedure.

<http://www.stockroom.com/Lube-Shooter-P2212.aspx>

CHOKER FUCKING

Cool edge play. You need to be in total two-way trust with your woman to do this, and be careful. Try at your own risk, as with anything in this book.

In Chapter Six, I wrote "I don't grab a woman's head and force her throat onto my cock. Women often hate this, and it's a sign of an inexperienced man."

There are times I break this rule, but only with permission. Dollie loves it when I grab her neck and fuck her face, hard. She actually cums from it, cums from the power dynamic. Just be aware of not gagging or choking your woman too much. Learn her preferences. But you both really need to have a high level of trust for this. And it helps to have a woman who, like Dollie, is a really sick little puppy...in a really healthy way.

I also sometimes put my hand on Dollie's throat, or the pet's throat, and choke them, just a little, while fucking them. They love it.

This is best done not at the start of play, but rather in the middle of a hypersexual series of fucks so the woman is already totally beyond turned on already.

Electrical Play

Can be dangerous, but can be fun. Should not be done with anyone with a heart condition. **DO AT YOUR OWN RISK.**

Violet Wand

Very psychedelic electrical glass devices that send a blue shock to the skin. Expensive (like half a grand or more). The Stockroom carries them.

Bug Zappers

I've seen people play at a dungeon with those things used for zapping bugs that look like tennis rackets. Watched a guy lightly smack a tied-



up woman on the tits over and over for a long time. Very impressive to watch, and makes a lot of "CRACK!" noises.

TENS unit

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/TENS_unit

A TENS unit is a device prescribed by doctors for pain reduction. It works by stimulating endorphin production in a localized area. It has a variable voltage and delivers a safe(ish) charge to little stick-on electrodes. The charge makes muscles twitch and can kind of make you feel "high", even if it's on your arm. The electrodes are disposable, but we use them a few times each. A TENS unit has been used, at a low setting, on the genitals for astonishing fun. (DO NOT TRY THIS AT HOME.)

They are supposed to be prescription only, but we bought ours on the Internet, for \$130 bucks, including extra supplies.

Safety guidelines (applicable to any electrical play), from Wikipedia:

TENS should also be used with caution in people with epilepsy or pregnant women (do not use over area of the uterus as the effects of electrical stimulation over the developing fetus are not known). TENS should not be used by people with an artificial cardiac pacemaker due to risk of interference and failure of their implanted device. Possible failure of these warnings can result in a cardiac arrhythmia.

TENS units should not be used across the throat or the heart. In fact you should not use them at all.

WEIGHT CONTROL

Weight control is making your woman lose, or gain, weight, to fit the image of her you have. This is a tricky one. ALL women have weight issues, whether they're overweight, underweight, or in the middle somewhere.

This should only be attempted with a woman who is YOUR woman, i.e. it's not for casual "play girls." It's only to be done if the woman has basically given up all control to you, and if you're good at dealing equitably with that responsibility.

The most common mistake vanilla guys make with weight control with women is saying, "You're too fat. Lose some weight." First of all, this is a mean way to put it. Secondly, vanilla guys do not have a master/slave dom/sub relationship with their women. So the woman is



first going to cry, then try to please her man by dieting, then when it gets hard, she's gonna get pissed at him for trying to control her and "eat at him." I know couples who've broken up over this.

And anyway, you know I like plump girls. I'd never ask a girl to lose weight. I'd just dress her up to look pretty as she is, and venerate her beauty, and fuck her so well that I bring inner beauty to the outside. And that's something that lasts beyond the bedroom. Fuck any girl really well, regularly, and she'll glow and look prettier. Friends and strangers alike will even think she's lost weight (and she might lose some anyway, from all the sexercise, but if she doesn't, she'll look better to the "plastic" world anyway).

My main thing is *fattening up skinny bitches*. If you come across a "fat girl hidden in a skinny girl's body", i.e., a cool woman who's perfect in every other way except she's bony, you might find it your duty to plump her up. And if she's put her control into your hand, and you're a decent guy, she'll probably do it. So, I present to you:
PROFESSOR THORNDADDY'S HEALTHY WEIGHT-GAIN DIET FOR SKINNY BITCHES:

(You should not attempt any dietetic change without consulting a physician.)

—Three meals a day of sandwiches, with two kinds of meat, two kinds of cheese, mustard, mayo, lettuce and tomato. (Lettuce and tomato won't fatten her up, but it will help keep her healthy, and the other stuff will fatten her up.) Season with pepper, not salt. Salt is bad for you.

—At least six glasses a day of chocolate milk (not the low-fat kind). Chocolate milk is yummy, fattening, and it also reminds girls of childhood, which is good for Daddy/daughter play, especially if you make a reward out of it. Especially before/during and after great sex.

—Steak for dinner, with salad, veggies and a baked potato. Fruit juice to drink. Use sour cream AND butter on the potatoes. If you can't afford steak, non-lean hamburger meat with cheese on top can suffice. The salad and veggies is to keep from clogging her arteries, and fruit juice is for fun, calories and vitamins.

—Plate of cookies to nibble on between meals. (But don't overdo the sugar, it can cause adult-onset diabetes over years' time. Though this diet is only for six months or so, then she can go back to a less-fat, less-calorie maintenance diet.)

—Peanut butter and jelly sandwiches



— and anything else she likes to eat.

If she likes coffee, make her drink Starbucks lattes. Those have a lot of calories.

When she gains her first bit of noticeable weight, reward her. When she's halfway to where you want her to be, buy her some new clothes to help her look great in "the new you." Buy some that fit her now, at the halfway point, and some others for later, to "grow into", as a motivational goal.

I recommend

www.biggalslingerie.com

if you have money, and WalMart if you don't. (They have some nice stuff, not just white trash clothes, though white trash clothes can be fun for certain fantasies, including street hooker fantasy play.) And www.biggalslingerie.com has GREAT photos. Sort of very soft-core porn. I've beat off to that site before.

Don't weigh your bitches. Bitches hate scales. Just judge weight gains by look and feel. And when she gains a little, tell her "GOOD GIRL!" pat her on the head, pet her all over, lick her pussy, and love the hell out of her. And when she gets to where you want her to be, switch her back to a normal diet, but keep an eye on her to make her stay where you want her, and adjust accordingly. And don't ever let her quickly gain, then later lose weight, or she'll end up with stretch marks. You want her plump, roundish, firm and perky in her belly, ass and luscious boobies.

Always treat women with dignity, even when you're treating them like ass-licking semen slaves made for your pleasure.

So, now that you know all about this stuff, you might be saying "I'm into it! Where can I find women to do stuff like this? Well, keep reading, eager male. >>>>



CHAPTER 9

Where To Find Willing Women

This chapter may seem out of order, like it should have been one of the first chapters, but I intentionally placed it later in the book. Because you aren't ready to find them until you know who you're looking for and what to do with them.

Some of you reading this book already have a woman, and just picked this book up to learn how to fuck her better. Or you've got a woman, and want another woman to play with you and your woman in king-like three-way bliss.

Or you're 35, still live in your parent's basement, and want to meet a girl who's got a little more going for her than the avatar you bought last month on Second Life.

My first advice: move out of your parent's basement. And if you've already done that, and live with roommates, try to move out and live alone. Earth-shaking "so good even the neighbors had a cigarette" sex is a problem if you live with people. Become independent, rule your own life, you won't have to worry about anyone else, and you'll also become more confident, which women dig.

And living alone is a great monastic way to hone your sex skills. For many reasons. First, you can live without interruptions, the better to train your mind and body. How are you going to masturbate nine hours a day to plump mature porn with a Flex-o-Pleaser up your bum to reprogram your instincts if your parents are in the house? (Come on! You're over 18! Move out for cripe's sake!) And how are you going to spend the time needed to devote your mind and soul to self-improvement to become worthy of being a sex master if you've roommates bugging you to go drinking or to have a house meeting about who didn't do the dishes? How are you going to encourage a woman to open her soul in your bed when people can hear in the next room?

Watch the movie *Taxi Driver*. Live like that guy. Except do it for good, not for evil. That is, devote yourself that heavily to self-improvement and training. And work toward the goal of fucking the brains out of curvy, pervy ladies, rather than killing senators.

When you live alone, you will more easily learn to master yourself. And only then, young Jedi, will you be prepared to master another.



WHERE TO START

Let's say you've fucked a few women. But never been in a long-term relationship that ended well. That's pretty common. And let's say you want to move into a new realm of having a woman, or women, devoting their life to you in unblinking servitude, both in the bed and out. Or let's say you just wanna have a girlfriend.

Being in a relationship is different from fucking a girl. Even in a 24/7 BDSM relationship, you have to make sacrifices. You only deserve to have another life in your control when you are willing to work with that life. Any master who tells you otherwise is not a true master, in my book. And hey...this is my book. If you disagree, write your own book.

To learn to have another life in your hands, start small. Start with a houseplant. If it doesn't die, you're ready to move up. Get a cat. If the cat thrives, you might be ready for humans.

Pet your cat often and tell her things like, "I'm proud of you. You're a brave and wonderful kitty." Cats love that, at least the tone of your voice saying it (and because they *are* brave and wonderful!), and you'll get into a good frame of mind for loving brave and wonderful cat-tastic humans.

MEETING WOMEN ONLINE

OK, since you didn't quit reading after my "Second Life" quip, I'm going to assume that maybe you spend some time on the Internet. The Internet ain't a bad place to meet women. I met my wife on the Internet.

First, **STAY OFF OF MYSPACE!!!!!!!** MySpace is, in my opinion, a festering example of everything that's wrong with, not only the Internet, but with the *world*. If you have a MySpace account, delete it NOW. Do not send out a bulletin that says "I'm leaving this place because it sucks." (Everyone laughs at those, anyway. Like, "What's wrong, ya pussy? Couldn't take the heat?") Do not send messages to your so-called "friends" saying you're leaving. Do not post any "find me here if you want" forwarding information. Just LEAVE.

MySpace is, in my opinion, an open sewer of ego and low-self esteem, sprinkled with phishing scams and bullshit advertisements competing for your attention to sell you fake pheromone-spray, useless bling (both real world and virtual bling), while shilling this week's reality-TV star's latest "musical" effort.

Trying to meet worthy women on MySpace is like trying to meditate to



enlightenment in a room filled with eight TVs blaring eight different shows, a juggler, a monkey, someone trying to sell you a used car, and someone else trying to mug you.

Also, EVERYONE LIES ON MYSPACE (even more than on the rest of the Internet), IMHO, and not just the advertisers trying to cram bling down your craw. People use doctored photos, only show their eyes or boobs, use photos that are ten years old, and claim to be much more than they are in their descriptions. Also, everyone lies about their age on MySpace, IMHO. Older people lower their age, and very young people raise their age, and people lie about who they even are, and grab someone else's photo to do it. That 21-year-old hottie you've been cybering with? She's probably either a 57-year-old obese gay male shut-in, or she's a ninth grader, and cybering with her may end up with you stammering and crying apologetically to Chris Hansen on "To Catch a Predator."

The table on this page perfectly breaks what lie each type of photo tells on MySpace:

<http://www.myspaceisgay.com/>

Besides, is it even possible to *find* love on a site owned by a company with possibly the most reprehensible business practices ever?:

<http://tinyurl.com/6ru386>

SO, STAY OFF OF MYSPACE. And also stay off of any site that resembles MySpace. (Facebook, et al. There's a billion of them, and they all suck, IMHO.)

Stay off of Twitter, it's a fucking short-attention span time-waster for people with no lives.

Also, STAY OFF BONDAGE.COM AND ALT.COM

Both sites used to be OK. Then Penthouse bought them, and it seems like Penthouse is trying to vanilla-ize both sites to bring in the blank food tubes, while simultaneously eliminating the ability for anyone with a free (non-paid account) to do anything other than drool and mechanically enter a credit card number in a daze. More picking pockets by remote control.

I met my wife on Bondage.com, my fifth day on there, with a free account. If Bondage.com were run then like it's run now, I would have never met Dollie. It is just too hard to communicate on there. Even with a paid account, they don't let you do the things that define the open ease of use of Web 2.0. For instance, you can no longer, under any circumstances, post a Web address anywhere on the site. This is ostensibly to prevent spamming, but there never was much on the site



anyway. Some non-kinky marketing weenie from the new company just came in and said, "This is how they taught me to do things in business school", and they took away all the fun. And now on Bondage.com, you can't even post a non-commercial educational kink resource that could save lives. I got in trouble on the "new and improved" Bondage.com for posting a link to "The Acid Test for Doms" for a new submissive asking a question about safety.

Since the buyout, people have been leaving in droves, and it's really not the same beast any more. (Though it must be said that Bondage.com still has more members than the smaller kink Web communities I like, which I'll reveal below. And sheer numbers can increase your chances of finding someone. Alt.com really has a lot of squicky humans, and is also now owned by Penthouse. Alt has even more members than Bondage.com. So maybe you can find what you're looking for on those sites, but I wouldn't bother these days.)

READ "THE ACID TEST FOR DOMS"

This amazing treatise was written by a very smart, mellow, cool dom named DrSpankenstein, and reading it has saved lives. It is written specifically for sub women wanting to safely meet dominant men, to weed out the crazies, fakes and abusers. But it's also got GREAT advice for safely meeting in person anyone you've met online. READ IT READ IT READ IT!

And of course, by publicizing the Acid Test in a book aimed at male doms, you could say I'm risking "reveling women's protection secrets" to a small handful of abusive males. But I don't think so. The acid test is so foolproof that, if all the advice was followed, it would still protect against a creepy male who read it to attempt to circumvent it.

You can read the Acid Test here:

http://www.askdollie.com/acid_test.htm

or hear Dollie Llama reading it, here:

http://www.askdollie.com/Submission-Coffee_12-25-07-AcidTestForDoms.mp3

DON'T CYBER.

Real doms don't cyber, at least they don't make it the main goal. The goal is to meet women, not poke them via I.M. Guys who give "online collars" live in their parent's paneled basement rec room. Real doms chat with women online a little, talk more about life in general and their



own view of the world, check out compatibility of the woman, then move on to the phone, then move on to real-life meetings. And real subs don't cyber. Real subs want to play with men in person.

To quote "The Acid Test For Doms":

"(Women should avoid any man who says) 'I want you to take my collar before you play with me.'

"This is another common demand of fakes, most often made by control freaks. They have to isolate you from other people and their advice, and sometimes a little ole 'cyber collar' is just the thing! **Cyber collars are worth less than the leather required to make one.**"

(Emphasis on last line is mine. And it's funny, because "cyber collars" are not real, and are thus not made of leather.)

OK, NOW I KNOW WHERE *NOT* TO GO, AND WHAT *NOT* TO DO.
BUT WHERE *SHOULD* I GO AND WHAT *SHOULD* I DO?

As for cool kink Web communities, I recommend (and am active on) these two:

<http://mydungeonspace.com/>

<http://triskelionsociety.com>

Sign up is free, and they're both run by people who do it because they love kink, not because they're trying to get rich. The first one has premium (paid) accounts also, but you can do a lot on either site with a free account. And check out forums on both. Great information and community there.

I'd recommend you don't "walk into the room and hit someone over the head with a chair" on either site. Don't go in and start hitting on women. Go in and be a gentleman. Be smart. Be excellent. Read forums for a while, lurk before you post, figure out how things work, and who's cool and who isn't. (There's weenies everywhere in this world, online and off. Except in my home. And in your home, if you make your own perfect little "nation of two" or "nation of three.")

As for "being excellent" I don't mean "be right." Good submissive women (and the doms on those sites, for that matter) are going to dislike you intently if you jump in and try to "prove to everyone how everything should be done", especially in kink. Especially if you don't have a lot of real-life experience with kink. And they'll be able to tell, even if you "know the lingo." There's a lot more to it than that.



Once you've been excellent in public on the forums for a few weeks, find the women who are single and seem worth talking to. E-mail them. Also friend and talk to men who seem cool. That's part of being "in the community", makes you less of an HNG, and you can learn a lot from other doms. And many are willing to help you with information. Dominants tend to like to teach.

Write the cool women, and don't hit on them. Chat them up, don't hide the fact that you might be interested, but do not start with "ON YOUR KNEES, BITCH!" This will get you ignored and probably banned from the site.

AVOID WEENIES

There are people on any Internet site who live to push people's buttons. Most of them live in their parents' basement. Do not engage them. *Do not feed the trolls.* There's nothing to gain from it. Block them and move on. They are "slack vampires", to use a phrase from the Book of the Subgenius.

PROTECT YOUR IDENTITY, AS WELL AS YOUR ANONYMITY

Always put your real year of birth on your profile (do NOT lie about your age), but never put your real *birthday* on any Website. That just makes it easier for people to steal your identity. Change your birthday by a couple days. This is not lying, it's protecting your ass from cyber crime. Also, don't put the company you work for, your address, or, obviously, your phone number. And if you live in a really really small town, you might want to list your home as a couple towns over.

Once you meet someone online and then decide to meet them in person, you can give them a few real details, as you see fit (be careful about that too, until you really know someone). But you don't need to have all your info out there for everybody to see and steal.

If you're in any kind of divorce situation, especially if it involves a custody battle, or if you work with children for a living, be really careful about putting photos of you or other info that could identify you online. This is a tough balance, because profiles with no photo get about 1/10th of the responses as ones with, but sometimes you've got to take care of yourself. Maybe only send a photo to people you've chatted with online a little. This still has the chance of someone "outing" you, but reduces the chance by a large amount.



IN REAL LIFE

Basically, I suggest that you just become involved in the world, in a natural way. Get out of the house. Move around a bit. Then find your sub (or subs), retreat from the world, and build your own little house of love. That's what I do. Dollie and I are also going to eventually buy many acres in Wyoming and build our own little world, a larger world than our current house in the suburbs. We'll finally have a home for *The ThornDaddy Foundation*. Our own promised land.

Picture *Fight Club*, but without the mayhem and fights. And with women, instead of dudes, in the many bunk beds. I just want some space between me and the world. My home is my castle, and I will defend it. When I can hear your hip hop, power tools, yelling or your fucking yappy dog inside my home with my windows shut, I feel like you're violating my Fourth Amendment right to be secure in my home.

My wife and I are a "nation of two" (with occasional ongoing visits from a sweet ambassador of love, the pet). We don't need to go out and party. We *are* a party.

SO...probably the best way to meet kinky women is to become involved with your local dungeon. Become a paid member, go to orientations and classes as well as play parties, and find out where the munches are. I don't party. I don't go to bars. (I don't even drink. I used to, but I'm a drunk so I stopped years ago.)

Munches are meetings of kinky people in a non-kinky public setting, just to get to know other kinky people. They are often held in restaurants, so dressing "kinky" is forbidden. Dress normal. Hitting on people at munches is forbidden too, to encourage subs and newcomers to feel comfortable. Munches are just to meet people, not just for play, but for friendship.

WHAT GOES AROUND COMES AROUND

Match make your friends. It's good karma, and also gets you talked about as a right-on guy, and tends to make people match make you. But don't do it for that reason. Do it if you meet a girl who you think would be right for one of your guy friends, but not for you. Set them up, selflessly, and then walk away. If it's meant to be, it will happen. If not, you did your good deed for the day and can turn your Bobcat Badge over anyway.

Don't just hook people up romantically. Help people with any "networking." (God, I hate that term. Reminds me of Mike from Marketing.) Hook deserving people up with roommates, band members, jobs, etc. It's good for your soul, and can come back to you with a cascade of pussy, luck, money and more.



PERVERT'S PARADISE

I swear, if I weren't married, I'd go to Home Depot to get laid. It's about the only place where women absolutely always make eye contact with me and smile. I think it's because they're kinky. Dollie says it's because I always have so much fun there, that I look like a kid in a candy store.

I'd probably also try large pet stores or equestrian supplier. Though I'd recommend you don't walk up to vanilla women and say, "Excuse me, miss, can I try this collar on you? My dog's neck is about the same size as yours."

DRESS:

A lot of kinky people are really into the "look", and a lot of the "looks" seem rather cliché to me. Some hetero dominant guys are into the "purple cape" look, with a lot of "knights of yore" flash and spooky magikal accoutrement. Most of the other straight doms (and even some straight female subs) seem to be into the leather look, which just makes me think of the Village People (gay) or Rob Halford from Judas Priest. (Really really really gay, incredibly gay, I mean, fucking faggy bend-me-over-the-pool-table GAY...and that's coming from me, a guy who's had a dick or two up my own bunghole in my distant past. Though that fucker can really really SIIIIING!) What a lot of very straight male doms into leather don't know is that the leather-boy tough-guy look as "shorthand" for bondage evolved from the first marginally "out" BDSM culture in America: gay leather bikers, which was codified by gay soldiers returning from WWII.

I'm not into protocol, and I dress the same going to the post office as I do while whippin' on ladies, at home or at the dungeon. Which means I always dress like a sloppy skater dude. I dress like this because it's comfortable. If you met Dollie and I, had dinner with us, you'd probably have no idea that we're kinky, except that we seem a lot happier and more relaxed than most couples. Because we have so much sex. You don't need to yell "I'm kinky!" to attract kinky women. You don't have to wear a "BDSM is cool" T-shirt. Just your smell should let them know. Just the sound of your voice. Remember, they're the same species, and can recognize it without the freak flag flying.

Just be yourself when trying to meet women. If that includes leather tough-guy duds or fruity purple capes, more power to you. I'll be home whipping on ladies in slips while wearing sneakers, shorts and a T-shirt.



CHAPTER 10

How to Keep Women Coming Back, and Begging for More

(Other than fucking her brains out, there's a little more to it than that....)

At the risk of sounding square here, I'll say something you've heard before from people you don't like: The key to any sound relationship is communication.

It's true. The difference is, the communication comes with a different entry level of parameters in kink than it does in the vanilla world of good marriages, or in the plastic world of TV talk show "We've brought out this prominent psychologist (who just happens to have a new book out) to solve all your communication problems in 30 minutes." (Well, it actually happens in 24 minutes & 30 seconds, with commercials.)

For instance, most non-kinky people, knowing all the details of my marriage with Dollie would see it as dysfunctional at best, and abusive at worst. Many people would say "OK, you say you two have a great time, but you beat her. How can that be healthy? And you say you love her, but you bring other women into your bed. How can there be positive communication? You've brainwashed the woman. She must have low self-esteem and needs to leave you and get years of therapy."

People who would say that just don't get it. I could probably tell them, "It's a kink thing, you wouldn't understand." But I don't want to talk to those people. I don't want to defend my love, and don't really need to. I am a good dominant, and good dominants walk away from confrontation. Macho assholes stay and fight. I know that to win in this world, I should only dominate those who welcome my strong hand. The rest, I'll avoid.

I don't only hang out with kinky people. Many of my friends are non-kinky, and a lot of people at the dungeon who try to talk to me bore me to snores because all they want to talk about is kink. But my friends all know I'm kinky, have checked out the podcast, at least once, and are kink friendly. I cannot have conversations with people who are not kink friendly. About anything. Because while kink is by far not all I am, it's so deeply a part of me that if you reject it, you reject me. My



wife is the same way.

So to people who think that consensual loving kink is abuse, I balk.

If you really want *proof* that BDSM is not abuse, and really want *proof* that the key to love is honesty and trust and communication, even in the BDSM world, be sure to read Appendix One.

You have to understand a few things to try to get what I mean by "The key to any sound relationship is communication" and how that isn't a contradiction to the fact that I leave welts on my lover's ass sometimes, or that I make her do dishes in high heels, a slip, a ball gag and a butt plug. Or that I bring other women into our bed, and that sometimes in the past, that has made her sad. (Read Appendix Three, "Poly Dollie" for her explanation of how she overcame that sadness.) What you have to understand is that Dollie and I started from a different place than most couples.

When I first met her I told her I could never have just one woman. She agreed to this condition. That's communication, and it brings a relationship to a different starting point than those in the vanilla world. I also told her that I could never love anyone "forever", but that I could love her one day at a time. I still love her more than any woman I have ever met, and our relationship has lasted longer than any I've ever been in. Because of communication. And because of our respect for our preexisting agreements. And because a good master-slave relationship is the end of the war of the sexes. And because she and I are both hypersexual and very compatible. And because we're *friends*. Best friends. She's my desert island human. In fact, I'm making a desert island with her and shutting out most of the world, because when you have a love like ours, the rest of the world, in all its lies, scams, ego, strife and even cheapening of sex, makes less and less sense as something to be a part of.

Dollie and I often sit up late into the night talking about everything under the sun. That's the person you want to take to a desert island. That's the person you want to marry.

I fucked over 200 women before I found the right one. Actually, two or three of them could have possibly been the right one. I'm not of that hippie-dippie persuasion that believes that there's only one person for everyone. But none of those 200 became Mrs. ThornDaddy, partially because most of them were very willful, and partly because I was not yet worthy.

I hate to add in more hippie bullshit here, but just think of me as a



hippie who owns a shotgun, and it may be easier to swallow. But *life is a journey, not a destination*. If you don't find the one your first week looking, keep looking. And keep honing all your life skills and people skills and sex skills and love skills and communication skills. Maybe the first 199 girls are the training for you to be *ready for the one*.

The key to communication within a master/slave relationship is this: There has to be some give and take, even if they exist to do what you say. Be human with them. There has to be honesty and there has to be trust.

DON'T BE AN ASSHOLE

There's a few thing that will drive women away really quickly. One is abuse. Don't hit, and don't yell. I have yelled at a few of my past girlfriends. It hastened the end of the love, and some of them would probably cross the street to avoid me. Not that I'm a danger to them, but just that the memories they have are so emotionally disturbing that they'd rather do anything but talk to me, because they'd think I'm still like that.

I never yell at my wife. On the rare occasion I'm mad at her enough to yell (maybe one or two times a year), I just speak to her quietly, and in a disappointed voice. If I need to, I can make her feel far worse doing that that I could by hitting her or smashing all the furniture.

DON'T INTERFERE WITH THEIR FAMILIES

Don't interfere with their families, don't keep them from seeing their families. Unless the have family members who are emotionally abusive to them. Then discuss the situation, and as her protector, help her take action. This action may include diminishing or even severing contact with those family members, but this choice is not to be made lightly.

The amount of control family members, in particular parents, can have on people even to old age, even past the death of the parents, is sometimes astonishing. Remember, "Your parents can push your buttons because your parents *installed* your buttons." But emotional abuse is still abuse. Protect your little girl from abuse.

YOU HAVE TO BE IN CONTROL OF YOURSELF TO CONTROL ANOTHER

Avoid booze and drugs to excess. If you drink too much, or do hard drugs, this shit ain't gonna work for you. Get help. Join a 12-step fellowship. I did. Saved my fucking life.

Booze and heroin brought out my true sadism, which is all emotional



sadism. Heroin because it dulled the horrible feeling I get from making someone I love hurt, and booze because it actually stoked the fires of hatred, and didn't make dull the horrible feeling I get from making someone I love hurt. It turns into a red hot explosion. I called this "hammer of hate behind my eyes" in one song I wrote, and sang "my brains are blowing out from pressure-jealousy" in another song.

DON'T THINK YOU CAN'T BE REPLACED IF YOU FUCK UP

Men cheat on women more than women cheat on men. What women tend to do is far more subtle, and more...ladylike.

Every woman in the world knows at least one guy who has subtly chatted her up, her yoga teacher, a co-worker, a friendly neighbor. When men in relationships are confronted with this type of flirting, they often flirt back, openly. Dumb. Women don't. They just smile, are sweet, and friendly, without doing anything that any jury could peg as flirting. But your woman knows that guy would make sweet sweet love to her all night long with nary a word. Hell, he'd probably support her too. If you're an asshole, she will leave, and give that "waiting in the wings" guy a call.

Don't act like you're the only game in town, you're not. What you have to really do is be the *best* game in town.

TAKE CARE OF YOUR SLAVE

Take care of your slave. She's your servant, but be nice to her. Love her. Rub her back. Pet her. Kiss her. Listen to her. Suck her pussy often, not just on her birthday and New Years. Sure, she'll still blow you more, after all, she is a slave, but once in a while, toss her down and lick that little flower, and good. And remember, if you have absolute trust from her, and give her reason to give you that same trust, you can do anything you want with her. Any time and anywhere.

Dollie adds: Encourage her to better herself, to learn new things, and not just sexually. Teach her. Give her freedoms if she needs them, or hold her on a close lead if she craves it (and as it suits you).



CHAPTER 11

How to Keep Women in Line

This is really a tricky one. No one can really “keep someone in line” in a loving relationship. The slave can leave any time she wants. However...

Women who like to be kept in line exist. It’s not sexist. And there are men who like to be controlled and it’s the same thing. I have a lot of female dominant (domme) friends, and I dig what they do.

If the Universe pairs you with a woman who wishes to have you take any amount of control of her life, accept the gift. Just don’t abuse it. It’s a rare and radiant blessing.

Some submissives have the desire and need for a lot of affirmative control, and if they don’t receive it, they feel that their needs are not being fulfilled and they will look elsewhere. These are the women who will best respond to things that might seem bizarre to the uninitiated, such as having to ask their master’s permission to speak or even use the bathroom, who may be asked to go stand in the corner, who have an enforced bedtime, even though they are adults.

Some vanilla people, including some psychiatrists, have suggested that this is a result of low self-esteem, that women like this are “broken.” (And that they require, of course, years of extensive and expensive therapy.) I disagree with this. I know many submissive women in very intense 24/7 BDSM relationships who have healthy self-esteem and still love to be controlled. They live for it, and love it.

In cases where there has been childhood abuse, or simply emotional distance from parents, adults who practice BDSM, I believe, are reclaiming and righting the abuse and neglect, and doing it in a healthy and in-control way.

I’ve met others, including my wife, who do not like a stern hand, who are cowed by heavy discipline. But she says, “If you never corrected me, on anything, I’d wonder if you were noticing me.” My guidance of her is much more mellow, and more based on reward than on punishment.



(This part written by our cool friend, Illustrated Tart):

I wonder what people would say if I "came out?" If I openly confessed to how I'm comfortable showing my adoration? What would they all say if I confessed that as an adult I have an enforced bedtime on weekdays? How would they react if they knew how much I fantasized about focusing a lot of my energy on things for his comfort and pleasure?

Would I be considered sick, helpless, brainwashed?

For the life of me I can't understand why aggression and dominance is a "must have" skill. What about the ease of a submissive, a supportive person? I've always felt better in the support/secondary role. Leading stresses me out to be honest. I excel under good leadership. I'm an introvert and very introspective, leadership and aggression are not things I enjoy. For every leader and dominant personality you need the complimentary part. If everyone is a leader problems arise - the phrase "too many chefs in the kitchen" comes to mind.

—Illustrated Tart

<http://www.underthisbenevolentdictatorship.blogspot.com/>

BE WITH THE RIGHT WOMAN

Some marriages fail because the husband is caught looking at porn. My wife likes porn as filthy as the stuff I like, maybe filthier. We share our porn, gleefully. Some marriages fail because the husband is caught fucking another woman. I fuck the other woman with my wife, and she digs it. And we have an unwritten "pre-nup" with regards to other girls. That was part of our deal.

Some marriages fail because, even though the people are compatible sexually, they don't have much to talk about. Or with time, they grow apart. Or one (or both) are nuts.

Avoid nutty women. Find healthy submissive women that you like outside the bed, as well as in bed. It's worth the wait and worth the search. And so what if you have to stick your dick in a few who aren't "the one" first? That's still fun, and just consider it training for being the right man for the right woman.

(Just don't allow the practise girls any misconceptions about the rela-



tionship to exist, either on your end or their end.)

I adore women, they should be protected and stroked and made to smile. There are some who are naturally submissive. If you are naturally dominant, and a decent guy, this type is for you. If you are not dominant, and/or a creep, do the world a favor and just fuck sluts. Sluts are women who have the sexual ideals of men. That's not bad, but it's not what I look for any more. I used to, but always ended up mad at them and them mad at me, because it was two people who were identical in desires butting heads. Sluts will get on their knees and do your bidding, but only to get you to do their bidding.

Submissives are very different. They exist to serve. And they are sweet, and love men. THEY ARE NOT LESS THAN THE MEN THEY ARE SERVING. It is not a case of "the man is better and the woman is the lowly slave." It is very different from this. A good pairing of a compatible master and slave is a symbiotic beautiful relationship where the two together are more than the sum of the parts. This takes a certain type of man, just as it takes a certain type of woman, and if you're not this type of man and/or she's not this type of woman, you might be better off with garden-variety party girls and sluts. If you are not dominant, maybe you are submissive and should find a dominant woman and be submissive to her.

(Or maybe you're not kinky, but that's not who I'm talking about here.)

DON'T YELL

Don't yell (unless it's part of sex play, and in fun). You don't need to bring the neighbors into this. You can be firmer and scarier, if you need to, being really really quiet when someone expects you to be really loud. It's reptilian, and it's a nice skill to know. Use it sparingly. (Remember that skinny woman with all the cats and the knife waiting for you to fall asleep.)

PUNISHMENT

Be cool, and be careful. Your slave is not an emotional whipping toilet. Keep any humiliation play / punishment play separate from any real punishment. You should probably never actually humiliate your slave. I don't. I couldn't bear the thought. A truly decent person doesn't take pleasure in making another being feel truly small. Take into account the fragilities of all humans, and especially your dear sweet slave, and particularly with regard to any issues she may have with her upbringing and past abuse.



PASSIVELY TRAINING YOUR SLAVE

Make her listen to "SUBMISSION AND COFFEE" non-stop. It's educational, entertaining, and will make her horny as hell.

TAKE US EVERYWHERE!

Sure, you can listen to our podcast on your computer, but you really need an MP3 player, so you can always have us with you. (And it's important that you always have us with you, to comfort you and guide you!) And get one for your slave, and assign it to her as homework. Fill it with episodes of our casts and give it to her for her birthday, or as a reward just for being a good girl!

This MP3 player on Amazon (Coby MP-C896 MP3 Player with 2 GB Flash Memory, FM Radio & USB Drive) is much cheaper than an iPod (40 bucks), and will hold about 30 of our episodes, www.amazon.com/Coby-MP-C896-Player-Flash-Memory/dp/B000PL60YE/ so you and your slave can take us everywhere!

If that's more than you need, this one (Coby MP-C827 MP3 Player w/128 MB Flash Memory & USB Drive) is 20 bucks and holds two hours of us: <http://www.amazon.com/MP-C827-Player-Flash-Memory-Drive/dp/B000E873QM/>

You can download our archived episode lessons, singly or in large zips of multiple casts, or on BitTorrent (please seed!) here: www.askdollie.com/archives.htm

CALL AND HEAR US!

There's a new service called podlinez.com that says on their site they're free and you can call a number they've assigned to a podcast and hear the latest episode. The number they're assigned to Submission and Coffee is 360-227-5757. I tried it and it worked, but I can't guarantee it will stay assigned forever. But try it. It's kinda cool, you can listen to us even if you're not near a computer.

HAVE YOUR OWN ROOM

Having your own room will make it easier to "keep your woman in line", because she won't be as "in your head" when you need some space.

I like having my own room, because I like my room looking like a man's room. My room looks like a dorm room/recording studio, office, with clothes on the floor. My wife's room looks like a woman's room.



Clean, light, nice, with women's clothes and little female touches and cutsie things everywhere. Too often, when a couple lives together and shares one room, the woman "wins" – i.e. the room looks like a woman's room, even though there's a man sharing it. Or it becomes so compromised that it's sterile, and no one "feels at home."

That's no way for a man to live. Have separate rooms and separate beds if you can. If you don't have room, work toward improving your life so you can have separate rooms and separate beds. We do, and I believe it will help allow us to stay married forever. We still sleep together, but you have the option to sleep alone, if someone's snoring, if you have different work schedules, if you just need some time. It will save your relationship. Everyone needs some space, and everyone needs a place to call their own, even if they're bonded for life with someone else.

(Dollie was a bit subdued by this idea at first, there's so much "societal normalcy" in the whole concept of "the marital bed", but she's come to love it, and cherishes her space as much as I do.)

DON'T BUY HER DIAMONDS...
...just really love her instead.

Diamonds are a scam. Diamonds are a way for women to keep *men* in line. Diamond ads basically tell men "If you don't give our corporation four months' salary, you will die alone and unloved." This is horseshit, and also makes men subservient, not only to the diamond companies, but to the women. There is nothing you have to give a really good woman, other than shelter, food, great sex, great conversation, and your undying affection. Notice there's no "diamonds" on that list.

Diamond ads on TV offend me far more than adult double-anal penetration hardcore porn offends an octogenarian Baptist Republican like my poor old dad. (And believe me, that would really offend him, if he ever saw any. I doubt he has. He can barely check his e-mail without calling me for tech support. But I know that the idea of porn really offends him. Even though the first hardcore porn I ever saw was under his mattress.)

One of the many reasons I dig my wife is she agrees with me that the societal directive for people to buy diamonds to prove love is silly. We're far more concerned with the eternal than the external.

I did give her a wedding ring, and she loves it but I didn't spend 1/3 of a year salary on it. It's a tiny diamond that belonged to my mother. I don't wear rings, so Dollie didn't buy me one. I don't need to wear a finger collar to show the world I'm loved. Dollie's love shows the world



I'm loved.

When we got married, she bought me a really good microphone for our podcast instead of a ring, and I bought her more computer memory as a wedding gift.

I love my life, I love my wife, and shimmery glistening chunks of dead, cold squished coal have nothing to do with my love.

If you love your woman, and don't want her to have a leash around *your* neck, don't buy into the lie. Give her love, not dead, cold carbon.

DON'T BE TIED DOWN

I have no desire to leave my wife, but I could. She knows this. She saw how I lived before she saved me from the hood and brought me to a better life. But I'm like a cat. I can always go back. Other people can't go back where they came from. Being able to live on nothing makes you better at living on a lot.

I can pack my life in a back pack. I live in a studio apartment within our home. I don't need bling. My world fits in a laptop and even if that were gone, it's backed up, encrypted on servers from Singapore to Montreal, with passwords that only exist in my memory. I cannot be tied down. My uber-potential for mobility makes it easier for me to stay, and makes her continue to earn her keep on Planet Daddy.

A lot of people stay in bad relationships because they have so much tying them together. I do everything with my wife, but keep my life simple so the ties would be easy to sever if they ever needed to be. And that makes it far less likely that they'll ever need to be.

CHAPTER 12

Overcoming Adversity

Any relationship, even a near-perfect kinky one, will have some hardship. It's not *all* kittens and cream. And even when the relationship is perfect, sometimes the plastic world seeps through the cracks and pokes at your perfect "nation of two" (or "nation of three").

**BABIES**

In case you were raised by Baptists and your parents never told you, we'll tell you: sex can lead to babies. Nothing is as adverse to having a great sex life as having a baby to deal with.

Get fixed. Do it. So you don't fucking pollute my earth with more melping, shitting blobs of protoplasm. Your baby will just grow up and mug me. Get fixed now. Or use condoms, religiously.

DISEASE

"I remember when sex was safe and music was dangerous."

—Me

Sex can lead to disease. I recommend getting checked out, using rubbers while you search for the right bitch(es), then fluid bonding with her (them). End of problem.

MISMATCHED SEX DRIVES

I have an extremely high sex drive. My wife's is even higher, but it's not a problem. I help keep her happy by reaching over and rubbing her pussy until she cums, five or six times a day. This is fun to do, even while we're watching a movie, at home, or in a theater (under a coat on her lap). She loves it. She also masturbates alone sometimes, usually when I'm sleeping. And I often masturbate alone, usually when she's at work. It's all good, and neither of us are threatened or made to feel less by this.

If your sex drive is higher than your woman's, and you don't wanna get a different woman (or a second woman), try this: lay next to her and beat off while she kisses on you and hugs you. (If you're right handed, she should probably be on your left side, and vice versa.) She should pet you, encourage you, rub your balls and do anything else you want done, and do it regularly without question. If she's willing to do that, you can probably make it work. It's damn sexy to have a woman do this. And often, they'll get turned from this, and want to have sex.

If her sex drive is higher than yours, you do the cuddling on her, while she masturbates. Hold the vibrator on her if you want.

Sometimes, even if a couple has closely matched sex drives, there is a smaller issue of the man's mood totally changing after he cums. This is natural, happens to a lot of men, and can make the woman feel left out, since she's still hot to trot.



Usually, while you "recharge", your dick may or may not get hard, but it will probably get very sensitive. Many men do not like to get blown right after they cum. Just have her clean the cum off your balls and tummy with her tongue, and give you a backrub until you're ready again.

If it's less a matter of sex drives and more like you're kinky and she isn't, it can be a big problem. Some people are just not wired kinky. But some are, and don't know it. You might be able to "bring it out", but you can't make something exist that isn't there.

If you're kinkier than your partner (or vice versa) you might want to get this book,

When Someone You Love Is Kinky,
<http://www.amazon.com/When-Someone-You-Love-Kinky/dp/1890159239>

read it, then give it to her. Might help.

Also, sometimes in long-term, loving relationships, when one partner suddenly discovers their kink (this sometimes happens later in life, it did with Dollie), the couple has a loving discussion, and an agreement is come to. Sometimes a married couple will agree to let one partner go have kinky interactions outside their marriage, with the blessing of the other partner. Sometimes this involves sex, sometimes not. Sometimes the need for kink is different than the need for sex, and can be satisfied just by finding someone to whip, or be whipped by. And there are women (and men) who can enjoy being whipped outside of sex.

JEALOUSY

Women are smarter than us, and more glorious. Men are more or less inferior. However, with women, the pussy bone is connected to the heart bone. Not always true with men. The dick bone is often connected to the jealousy bone.

My wife is hot, but she's experienced. She's had, among many other experiences, the joy of being fucked by seven men at once, more than one time (with different men each time), before we met, at swing parties. That's fucking hot. And for me, it's better than fucking some younger woman who doesn't have that type of experience. And even though Dollie has been very into group sex in the past, she's very very happy just fucking me now. (Though she also says that having sex with me can feel like fucking several men at once. the pet says this too.)



NON-ORGASMIC WOMEN

Well, this book has taught you how to find, meet and train women who are already orgasmic. But what if you're already with a woman, you love her, and she doesn't cum easily, or at all?

Most everything in this book will produce orgasms in women, and plenty of orgasms. But a great solution for getting women to be orgasmic is to just buy them a vibrator. (I recommend the *Hitachi Magic Wand*.) Have her use it alone, and also use it on her. Then have her use it alone again. Most women are unable to resist the charms of the 'Wand.

If your woman has deep-seated issues, perhaps from past abuse, that get in the way of her claiming her God-given right to cum like a banshee in your bed, I do not recommend avoiding therapy. Just make sure the therapist is kink-friendly. Some are, some aren't, and just view it as abuse. Here's a list of therapists who do not view BDSM as abuse, and are friendly to kinky people as patients without trying to "cure" them of it:

http://www.ncsfreedom.org/index.php?option=com_keyword&id=270

(The list includes not only therapists, but kink-friendly doctors and lawyers, too.)

IMPOTENCE

Forget pills, potions and gels. That's just more bullshit of the "con" trying to pick your pockets by remote control. And those pills have a list of side effects with so many horrible things, including death, that I'd never take one.

I don't get impotent much, but when I do, I don't worry about it. I tell the bitch to open her legs, lick her pussy and asshole until she's squirming. Then I grab some lube and pour it over my hand. I rub it on her pussy, my palm, my knuckles and my dick. Then I jack off my limp dick while rubbing my knuckles on her pussy and asshole. She gets off, I start getting off, I get hard, then I stick it in her pussy (or asshole, if she's cleaned out like a good girl) and splurt. She says "thank you, Sir!" while kneeling before me.

If you have trouble getting it up, eat pussy. Women love it, they may just forget you can't get it up, and it might also get you hard. If it does, she's wet and good to go for you to slide it in. Also, treat her like a whore. Slap her on the ass, watch porn while doing so, talk dirty, and think of something filthy. If it helps, I like this fantasy: think of your bitch as one of several bitches you own, and you're taking them to a dungeon or swing party and passing them around (either as punish-



ment or reward...take your pick, depends on the girl). Making them lick assholes, suck cock, lick pussies full of cum, felching (sucking cum out of the ass) of various men and women, men and women they don't even know the name of. Maybe they're blindfolded and don't even SEE who they're servicing. They're the BELLES OF THE SWING PARTY.

And actually try blindfolds on her. That can help you get it up. Sometimes you just don't want to see your bitch's eyes looking at you with love. The eyes *are* the window to the soul, and sometimes it will make you harder quicker to just use your bitch as a fuck toy and forget that she's a deep and thinking creature.

(This is part of why I love porn and hate the idea of going to a strip club. In a strip club, you can see their eyes see yours, and know that they're lying about liking you. In porn, they can't react back, and it's easier to objectify them.)

SAYING GOODBYE IF IT DOESN'T WORK OUT

When it comes time to end it, if she's not the one for you, you're not the one for her, or if she's too high-maintenance emotionally, or especially if she's nuts (or for any other reason), do it with respect. No one likes to be "dumped."

I'm still friends with my first-ever girlfriend, and a lot of gals in between. And a few women I've dated wanted to kill me. I had to call the cops on one, because she kept leaving "I'M GOING TO KILL YOU AND I KNOW WHERE YOU LIVE" phone messages after I gently let her go.

The question of whether to keep her as a friend or not is tough. I think for this, you have to be really honest with yourself about your motivations. If your motivation is to "string her along" to keep her around for sex, fuck you. Women deserve honesty, and this type of shit will hurt their souls. (And they might kill you in your sleep.) However, if you think she can be released as your slave, but handle still being a fuck buddy, it might be worth a try. But you also have to make sure she can handle that. Some women will trick themselves into thinking they can, in order to have a chance at "winning you back" or just to bask a little in your presence.

And do keep in mind that even a respectful release can make some people really upset.



STALKERS

I'm no lawyer, but here's what's worked for me....Here is my experience with harassment from afar: If it gets to a bad place, and I have to call the cops, I call the cops in MY town, not the alleged harasser's town. Seems odd, but the police told me (after several phone calls to both places), that it's dealt with where the alleged threats are *received*, not where they are *made*. And I called the non-emergency police number, not 911, to make a report like this.

I've done this once, when an ex-girlfriend was making repeated threatening calls after I got married. The cops in my town called her in her town, talked to her, and it stopped.

I've also put exactly one restraining order on someone, a guy who was repeatedly threatening me (after I called 911 every time he beat his wife, once while she was pregnant). He lived in my building (in the apartment directly above me), a long time ago, before I moved to Los Angeles area (this is part of the REASON I left San Francisco after 16 years of living there).

A restraining order takes a lot of effort, involves going to court, and is only, in my opinion, for people who will not stop, are truly dangerous, and live in the same town.

Most people are not insane enough to keep pursuing you for long if you ignore them. They want a fight, and will move on to the next victim if you don't feed the beast with negative attention. They want you scared, and if you cease responding, they aren't getting what they want from you and will look for someone else to twist up.

So, my order of escalation for dealing with weenies who are going way out of their way to wrongly impose their will on me is this:

1. Telling them, "It's over, please do not e-mail, call, write me or come to my house."
2. Ignoring.
3. Blocking e-mail, blocking phone number.
4. Have the cops call them.
5. Restraining order.
6. Moving to a different town, legally arming yourself, and starting over.

(I also keep a log and copies of any of these actions taken, and copies and dates on any of their annoying contacts or threats. It can come in handy, the further down the list you have to go.)

Usually it never gets past number 1 or 2, unless the person is insane.



I'd also say, from experience, if you have to have a TRO (temporary restraining order) served (first step in getting a full restraining order, which can be good for three or more years), hire a process server, rather than having the cops serve the papers. Cops are not usually that proactive about it. They've got real crimes to deal with, and preventing possible future crimes is lower on their list, by necessity. And don't have your cousin or brother or friend serve the TRO. It's best to have a someone you don't know serve papers. Because your cousin/brother/friend may get into it verbally (or physically) with the stalker, which will not help your case. Also, it is usually a legal requirement that the person serving process is "not a party to the dispute" (that is, that they are a person who has no legal interest in the proceedings). And the person serving papers HAS to be of legal age.

I have security cameras outside my home and can see who's out there. Security cameras don't cost that much, and are totally worth it (to know who's there, and also to have proof that they were there, if they later deny it, or deny they acted inappropriately).

If the stalker showed up at my house, I wouldn't open the door, I'd call 911 immediately. If the stalker came in uninvited, well, I own mace, a stun gun and a shotgun. And I would only even consider using the latter IN my home, and ONLY if the person were armed and trying to kill me. California, unfortunately is not a "shoot the burglar" state. (Some states are. In some states it's a lot easier to shoot someone for simply storming or breaking into your home. In California, you have to prove they were trying to kill you.)

Judges tend to NOT want to issue more intense (longer duration, further distance the person has to stay away) restraining orders unless there's an extreme danger to the party placing the order, because restricting personal freedoms is antithetical to the basic tenets of constitutional rights.

I have gone through the effort of getting a restraining order only one time, and I was in genuine danger. Also, in my experience, you must have your paperwork perfectly in order, and do not argue with the judge. Remain calm and you're probably more likely to get what you need in court. I had my papers in order, stayed calm, and the judge issued the order.

One thing to know: a restraining order will not always restrain a truly unbalanced person. It will sometimes even escalate their actions. However, a restraining order DOES make it easier to prosecute any new serious actions on their part later on.



I also have learned from past experiences, and try to stay out of pushy people's radar, and have had to become a very good judge of people's personalities and their potential to push.

Even so, a lot of people don't like me, because I put my head above the crowd and have strong opinions. Both in my kink persona and under my legal name. Since I operate in both worlds, I've often got twice the enemies people with similar visibility and attitude would have.

But I make it hard for people to stalk me. I don't even post the CITY I live in on the Internet. My phone number is unlisted. Less than ten people have my phone number, and five of them are family. I love interfacing with the world via the Internet, and in real life with a VERY few special people, but I am a master who only wants to dominate people who want to be dominated. This helps keep crazy people out of my hair, too.

NEIGHBORS AND NOISE

Sex...if you're doing it right, it can sound like abuse. My wife is a screamer, and I slap her on the ass with a cane, and scream dirty whore talk at her. She loves it, I love it.

But the neighbors may not love it. if you make enough noise, someone might call the cops, thinking you're abusing your woman (or killing her, if it's *really* hot sex).

If the cops came to my door for this, I would yell "be right there", have me and the wife throw on bathrobes or long T-shirts, and answer the door *together*. We'd say "We're just having hot sex", and smile, and it would be pretty obvious we were telling the truth. They might put us in separate cars and question us, but I don't think it would go much past that.

I would not let them come inside. They don't need to see our dungeon. They may have watched too many episodes of "Law and Order: Special Victims Unit" and feel that everyone into bondage is a serial murderer, and taser me. I'm not *that* into electrical play.

I don't want the cops at my door. I've soundproofed my bedroom as much as possible, and boarded up the window with three layers of plywood with cotton batting in between, then nailed a rug over it. (I also put a curtain between the last layer of plywood and the glass, so our nest doesn't look like a boarded-up crack house from the outside.) This treatment sort of turns my room into an orgone chamber, but moreover, it keeps the outside noises out and the inside noises in.

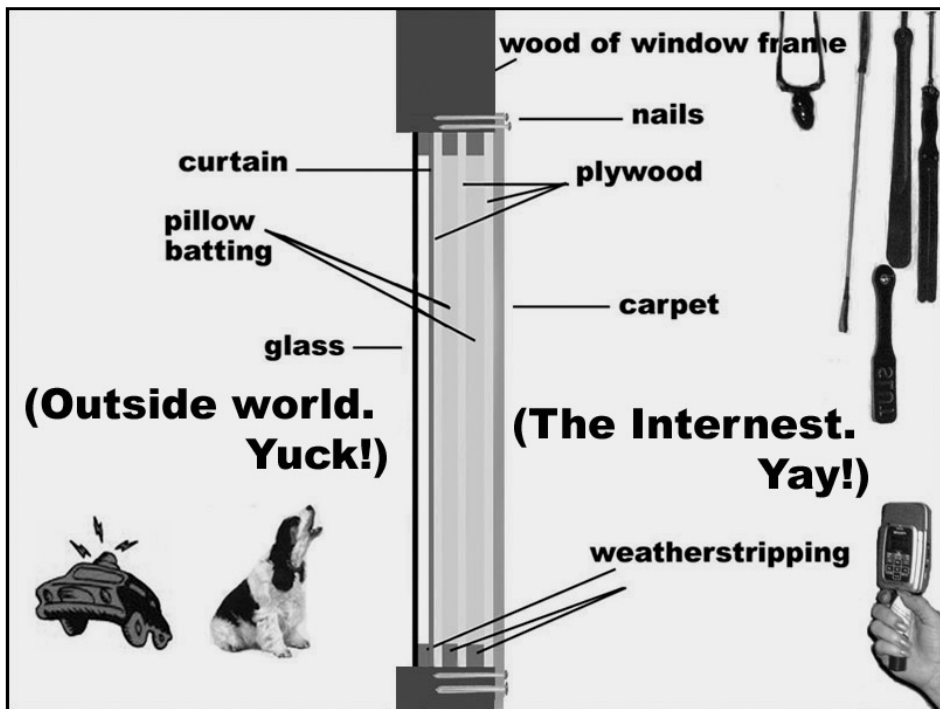


Image I made that shows how we soundproofed my bedroom window

Making my room a windowless chamber with rugs on the walls makes me think better, too. I tend to go 100 MPH in my life, working on many projects together, and outside interferences clog my brilliant brain. I have cut the world out, created my own 90 square foot fuck/think/work chamber within our 1200 square foot townhouse. I don't wanna hear your music. I wanna make my own music, using ladies as my instruments.

However, if you are a renter, and can't fuck up your house without losing your deposit, try a ball gag on your girl. It will make your woman quieter, and it's fun. Shut that bitch up. Many women love being gagged, they love the feeling of being shut up by someone they love and trust. **(It's your very important responsibility to keep an eye on her, never leave her alone tied and/or gagged, and remove the gag IMMEDIATELY at the first sign of real distress or choking or breathing issues.)**



YOUR FAMILY DOCTOR

Doctors have to report any abuse a patient is suffering at the hands of others, if the patient is underage, elderly, retarded, or otherwise incapable of making their own decisions. If the patient is, like you, a capable adult, they will probably ask you about it. If your doctor sees bruises on you or your woman from consensual sex, explain calmly and confidently that it is from consensual rough sex, you like it, and it is not abuse. If they believe you that it's from rough sex but think that rough sex is abuse, I'd suggest you find a different doctor. (See Web link for list of kink-friendly professionals above, in the section on "NON-ORGASMIC WOMEN.")

PEOPLE SAYING YOU DID SOMETHING YOU DIDN'T

There have been a few high-profile cases of a sub agreeing to consensual bondage sex, the whole thing going too far, and then the sub suing the dom, or trying to get him arrested for rape and/or abuse, later. There's a few ways to avoid this.

First, don't fuck crazy bitches. Meet any potential play partners in a public place, and check them out. Get good at vetting humans, and don't just listen to your dick. If she seems nuts, at all, excuse yourself and split.

Second, don't EVER play while intoxicated. It is very very common for a person to be high or drunk and agree to something that's outside their comfort zone and regret it when they sober up. And you, as the dom, cannot make safe decisions if you're altered. So, play safe, play sane, play sober. You'll remember it all better, too.

Third: contracts.

I'm not a lawyer, and this does not constitute legal advice, but this is what I do. The first time I play with a new woman, me and my wife have the chick sign a release form, agreeing to whatever is/has been planned. If there is no definite plan, we agree that BDSM sex will occur, and that the woman's safeword will be honored. Also, if we're recording it, we get written permission to do so, and to podcast it later. Below is the contract we used with the pet the first few times. (We also scanned her driver's license to have proof of legal age, and proof of identity, on hand. A woman who doesn't know you might not agree to that part, but the pet did, because Dollie and I are trusted members of the worldwide BDSM community.)

We also video recorded her signing this contract. We do that with all play partners, in case they later try to claim that their signature was forged or that they were forced to sign.

Release forms and video recording the signing are not foolproof, but we



feel they could help "make it go away" if we were accused of something we didn't do easier than having nothing in writing would.

(We all used our actual names in the contract, here they've been changed to our "kink" names):

PODCAST AUDIO AND STILL IMAGE RELEASE

I, (the pet), an adult, hereby agree to have audio recordings of me talking about BDSM and sex, recorded with (ThornDaddy), his wife, (Dollie Llama), used in podcasts called "SUBMISSION AND COFFEE." The podcasts may also include interviews with me about my sexuality, and other topics. The podcasts may also include audio recordings of me engaging in consensual sexual activity, both of a BDSM nature or otherwise, with (ThornDaddy) and (Dollie Llama). The podcasts are being produced by (ThornDaddy) (as "ThornDaddy"). (Dollie Llama) appears in the podcasts as "Dollie Llama." I give (ThornDaddy), (Dollie Llama) and PEEP! Press the rights to use my words and voice, edited as they see fit, in the podcasts.

I also grant (ThornDaddy), (Dollie Llama) and PEEP! Press the right to use any digital still photographic images of me that do not reveal my face or identity in connection with the podcasts and related media of their choosing.

(ThornDaddy), (Dollie Llama) and PEEP! Press will not use or reveal my true identity in the podcasts, or any future media produced from the recordings.

(ThornDaddy), (Dollie Llama) and PEEP! Press are not under any obligation to use my recordings or images, but may do so if they wish.

I will not receive monetary compensation, but will be credited as **"the maid"** or **"the pet"** and provided zip file copies on disc of the final edited episodes of each podcast in which I appear.

I agree to have consensual BDSM sex sessions involving (ThornDaddy) and (Dollie Llama) which may be used in connection with the podcasts. I understand what this entails, and understand that my "safeword" (RED) will be honored, meaning that all activity will stop immediately until any difficulty I have or am experiencing will be resolved to my comfort.

On my own behalf, and on behalf of my heirs, next of kin, executors, administrators, successors and assigns, I hereby release (ThornDaddy), (Dollie Llama) and PEEP! Press, their agents, licensees, successors and assigns, from any and all claims, liabilities and damages arising out of



the rights granted hereunder, or the exercise thereof.

I hereby irrevocably grant (ThornDaddy), (Dollie Llama) and PEEP! Press the right to use my voice, sounds and words from any and all podcast recording sessions, in the podcast and in directly related materials in perpetuity throughout the known universe, in any mediums extant or later invented.

I agree to provide my legal identification for copying to (ThornDaddy), (Dollie Llama) and PEEP! Press for copying and retention in their records.

This release cancels, replaces and supercedes any and all prior releases concerning my involvement with (ThornDaddy), (Dollie Llama) and PEEP! Press in connection with the podcast "SUBMISSION AND COFFEE", specifically and including the release pertaining to the recording of "SUBMISSION AND COFFEE" of February 25, 2008.

This agreement and release may be terminated by any party upon written notice to all other parties. However, cancellation may not and will not impact use or continuing use of any previously recorded audio or still images, which will remain subject to the above terms and conditions in perpetuity.

Date: _____

Signature: _____

(the pet)

=====
=====
=====
=====

GOLDDIGGERS

Dump' em. Name comes from "one who steals the gold from the teeth of a corpse." There's various degrees of them - from "normal" women (remember my bit about diamonds??) to the skinny bitches (they're always skinny) who slowly poison their men to get the house in their name. (The woman my dad married after my mother kicked him out for cheating falls only a little short of this.)



And this book is mainly for dominant men, but if you're a submissive (or switch) man and looking to be dominated by women, you might want to read this bit of advice I wrote to a curious friend. (Hell, read it even you're dominant, it will have something useful for ya anyway):

Should you decide you're looking for a dominant woman, and since you've mentioned the issue of who pays for dinner, understand that there exists the concept of "financial domination", which seems to be more prevalent with female dominants than with their male counterparts (probably because there are more rich men than rich women in the world). A Google search of the term "financial domination", in quotes, yields 203,000 hits. A random sampling indicates that most of them are women offering this "service" to men. Read up on it, and find out if it's something you'd be interested in. It generally appeals to rich people who feel guilty about their wealth and find some relief from having some of it taken away in a dominant power exchange.

Financial domination is not, in and of itself, an intrinsically evil thing, if both parties agree up front that it's what they want and need. But be wary of anyone in this world (female or male, this exists with both), who seek to take their partners (or anyone) into financial domination step by step without first calling it that up front.

WOMEN WHO FAKE ORGASM

These should be cut out of your life, immediately. While some do it to try to please you more, most who do it are psychotic, and will probably kill you in your sleep. The main reason women do it is to "get you to finish" and any woman who wants you to finish quickly doesn't really like sex, and has any number of twisted motivations for fucking you anyway, ranging from low self-esteem to golddiggerly to they want to kill you in your sleep. (Or with some bitches, all three of these reasons.)

It's easy to tell if she's faking. If you suspect she is, after she "cums", place your hand on her heart. When a woman really cums hard, her heart is beating really fucking hard. If she's faking, it will be beating normally.

DEALING WITH THE BULLSHIT OF THE WORLD

If you start having incredible, frequent sex with someone you love, you're not going to want to leave your house much. The world will be



more of an imposition on the little "nation of two" you've made. My wife and I are like this. It's a drag when she has to leave to go to work, when either of us have to attend to family stuff.....And why is family so important? It's an accident of birth. Most families are so dysfunctional, that everyone involved would be happier never speaking again. Yet people are OBLIGATED to travel and eat and drink and do stupid shit once or twice a year to celebrate a god they don't even understand. Fuck that. Once kids are adults, they're on their own. Once you're an adult, you shouldn't bug your parents, parents should only spend time with their adult children if they WANT to. Adults should be free to go create their own family. My wife and I have done this - a family of two.

To better deal with the bullshit of the world, you need to improve yourself. Some humans are constitutionally incapable of being nice, this book cannot help them. They need years of therapy. Some are confused and angry, but can "get it", and get better, with constant and consistent work.

Pray for your enemies. If you don't pray, genuinely wish them well. Daily. With time, the amount of space they take up in your head will diminish.

I recommend you constantly work on self-improvement. A good place to start is keeping a journal. That's not faggy. Tough guys like Hemingway kept journals. Hemingway was a boxer, a gun slinger and fucker of women. Not a fucking sissy.

GUILT

There are a lot of people who don't want you to have a great sex life (as if it's any of their business). Their reasons vary: some book written thousands of years ago told them, or they think you're hurting women by fucking them really really well, or maybe they're just not getting much sex and they're envious. Regardless, it's your right as a human animal on the planet earth to have as much sex as physically possible. Here's how to deal with various people, thoughts, forces, movements and conditions that conspire to keep you from squirting gallons of spunk into and onto every part of many stunning and sultry women every day for the rest of your life.

GUILT – RELIGIOUS

I feel that religious men who try to squelch all but the most procreative sex are doing it because they are terrified of a woman's orgasm. Even the most potent fucker like me can only come about a dozen times a day, many men far less, and some woman can cum a hundred times a day or more. A man's few puny squirts seem like yawns in comparison,



so men try to subjugate all women against their will by trying to keep them from choosing when, and with whom, they have sex.

I love my slaves-by-their-own choice and love to help them to as many huge orgasms a day as possible. I'm not binding them, I'm *liberating* them.

The Christian, Jewish and Muslim faiths all came out of the same tree. (If you don't know this to be true, you don't know much about world history.) A friend of mine said it well, when asked by his girlfriend, "Why has there always been so much fighting in the Middle East?" He said, "Because Abraham had two sons." That's it in a nutshell, people. He had two sons, Isaac and Ishmael. The Jewish and Muslim faiths spun off these two cats. And Christianity spun off the Jewish faith.

I love God, and don't want to denigrate anyone's faith. And at the risk of having people from all three camps wanting to kill me, I'll say this: none of it makes much sense to me. And that's not armchair punk rock bullshit, that's coming from a former Christian who knows the Bible better than most Christians.

There are people of devout piety in this world, and as long as they don't impinge on my constitutional rights to do whatever I want, with consenting adults in my home, I'm fine with them. But as soon as they want to stop me from my bedroom activities, I take up my pen and slay their swords. And I always win. Even if they kill me. (Remember...the book you hold is a holy book, and it's your duty to propagate it on BitTorrent and in any other way you can.) This book "surrounds hate and forces it to surrender."

HOW TO FUCK A WOMAN'S BRAINS OUT may be the most important book ever. You know it. It will be read and loved by scholars as well as by people who've never read another book, and will be of equal importance to both.

So, as for religious guilt, consider the source. Are you going to take moral advice from people who still routinely cut the clits off of young girls?

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Female_genital_cutting

Are you gonna let a celibate guy in a pointy hat who doesn't even speak your language tell you what to do?

I'll tell you this. The Pope is banned for life from my ranch in Wyoming. His name does not appear in *my* book of life. He will never make *The Golden Floppy Disc of Redemption*:



<http://www.askdollie.com/goldenDisc.htm>

You gonna listen to the commands of people from 2000 years ago (or even 3000 years, in the case of the Old Testament)? People for whom, as one guy put it, "a wheelbarrow would have been a vast improvement in the current technology?"

Those dusty old books have some great stories, and they have more sex and violence than all the rap songs AND country songs combined, but I do not feel any book (except maybe the one you're holding) is the divinely inspired work of God.

At least there are certainly no books that are the ONLY divinely inspired work of God. That's my problem with many religious people. **They're so goddamned sure that they're RIGHT.**

It's amazing to me that the Catholics have ended up where they are. The Roman Catholic Church claims to be the true inspired Church of Jesus, descended from the original 12 disciples (or the 10 true disciples, they sometimes look at it that way, remember, Judas Iscariot sold Jesus out to have him killed, and Simon Peter doubted and denied Jesus, thrice.) Jesus was put to death *specifically* for challenging organized religion. He broke bread with whores, and he overturned the tables of the money changers in anger, because their actions were upsetting to God. Yet The Church has evolved into the most organized, richest church in the world. The Pope isn't a religious leader so much as a king of a worldwide Kingdom. And I don't recall Jesus silently protecting child molesters, like various Popes have done for a long time. The current Pope recently held a meeting to apologize to people who had been sexually abused by priests as children, thereby finally admitting that there *is* a problem:

<http://www.newsweek.com/id/132499?from=rss>

Check out the BBC documentary, *Sex Crimes and the Vatican*
<http://greyloodge.org/gpc/?p=1392>

It explores the existence of a Vatican directive concerning a code of silence to protect priests who abuse children sexually.

Hell, the original things that Jesus was revolting against were small compared to this. And yet Catholics get upset if you talk about this stuff.

The Pope blames pornography for the disintegration of the family unit. I blame the Roman Catholic Church for the disintegration of the family unit.



Since the Church opposes all forms of artificial birth control, the Church is directly responsible for overpopulation, which is the root of all major maladies the world over, as well as being responsible for the coming total collapse of the infrastructure of the world (some time around 2040, I'll venture). And since the Church is to blame for unchecked multiple births by people not ready to have kids, this leads to boys being raised without fathers, or without competent fathers, which is the main cause for the generation of remorseless supercriminals who will try to make your life hell in the coming technological apocalypse. These doods come in all colors, but you can easily spot them by their backwards baseball caps, cheap showy bling and very loud voices. They demand to be *heard*, even though they have nothing to say. (Except, "LOOK AT ME, FUCKERS!") They have low I.Q.s fueled with steroids, crack and malt liquor. They drop out of school at 15, the only education they receive is from "Grand Theft Auto" and Maxim. (Picture Mike from Marketing with a Glock instead of an MBA.)

These fuckers will rape your women for a laugh and slit your throat for a cigarette on Saturday night, and be absolved by a kiddie-touching priest on Sunday morning.

Defend yourself. Don't spend your next paycheck on bling. Don't spend it on the latest fashion. Don't spend it on spinners. Go to WalMart, buy a shotgun, and buy a ton (literally) of ammo, now, while you still can.

My friend Skip Lunch in China says:

...Yeah, but over one-fifth of the world is in China, and there's not too many Roman Catholics in China (*):

I replied: "Yeah, but at least China makes an *effort* at controlling population. The Catholics are encouraging population growth."

Don't get me started on Christians. I have friend of a friend whose parents did not allow her to seek medical treatment for her epilepsy because they felt it was demonic possession and dealt with it only with prayer. I know adults who are ashamed of sex because their Bible-thumper parents spanked them for touching their genitals while peeing.

So basically, yeah. I have some Christian guilt that was poured into my head at an age when I was too young to defend myself. My dad was a Sunday school teacher, and I spent four years going to church four times a week at an all-boys Episcopalian boarding school. (I got kicked out as a senior for calling the headmaster a "fat, bald, overtly Christian old fart.") But my religious guilt is almost gone, because I love science. I understand the workings of the world, understand it is too complicat-



ed to have been created spontaneously in six days, and know it to be well over five-thousand years old. And I know that the earth is not flat. I'm a modern man with modern ideas and a love of learning. I believe there is a creating force that set everything in motion, but I do not believe that it lives on a cloud stroking its long gray beard and sitting in judgment of all I do. I do pray, but prayers of thanks. I do not believe I can petition the creator with a wish list, like it's Santa Claus. And I'm absolutely sure it does not care what I do in my bedroom with consenting adults. And every time I lick a woman (or two) in the pussy and asshole, every time I pump a beautiful, resplendent bitch full of my sterile baby juice, my prayer is furthered and the tiny guilt is made even smaller.

Religious people who make it their mission to squelch sex outside of marriage are, in my opinion, nothing but a buncha pussies who can't fuck. Like this Christian anti-porn site. <http://www.xxxchurch.com/> (These guys have "re-education ministries" that specialize in training people to be "not addicted" to porn, like Christians who "teach" gays not to be gay. I say fuck it. Train yourself to love porn *more*. And do it because you know that God put sex here for your spiritual bliss. Sexual bliss is your divine birthright.)

Christians who make it their life's work to tell people why they shouldn't look at porn remind me of a musician I knew who "found Jesus" and decided that rock music was evil. He quit his band and traveled the country to warn people about "the evils of rock." His band wasn't popular or good. If it had been, he wouldn't have given it up to get more attention (and probably more pussy) preaching his misinterpretation of God's word.

Muslims do one thing that I dig: they allow for multiple wives. But their law (which is based on their religion) also MAKES their wives obey, which is not the same as a woman beautifully deciding to GIVE her master her subservience, like my wife does. And if a man can have several wives, it's only fair that a woman should be able to have several husbands. No religion that I know of allows for that. I'm not anti-Muslim or anti-Arab, we just have different ideas on a lot of things, so I tend to stay out of their way. I feel the same way about most Christians. "I don't hate 'em, but I feel better when they're not around."

Here's the truth, delivered directly from God's mouth to my pen: God wants you sexy. Sex was created to spread love, and once you've spread love like I spread love, you'll never go back.

If everyone fucked as much as I do and smelled as much as I do, there would be no war. There would also be no work getting done, because



people would stay home and fuck. Society would crumble. Infrastructure would dissolve. No one would collect the trash.

So if 1/3 of the world follows the directions in this book, it will all be good.

People who can fuck really well should get paid for it, just to do it, by the government.

By the way, the only thing nearly as ethnocentric and blind as believing that the predominant religion in your country is the One True Religion because you were told that as a child, is being willing to fight someone over your "loyalty" to the local sports team.

I'm all for physical activity, but pro sports teams are corporations created by the CON to pick your pockets by remote control. Out-of-shape guys on the couch drinking beer and eating chips and rooting for "our" team make me laugh. Those fans would die of a heart attack in five minutes of that kind of sports activity (or five minutes of the kind of sex that I have). The guys on the team these fans call "our team" couldn't care less about the individual fans. The board members who own the corporation that owns the franchise could care even less about the fans, except for the money they spend.

Mike from Marketing is extremely into sports, and adamantly believes that "his" team is the best.

GUILT – SOCIETAL

There is a belief in modern society (that harkens back to ancient society) that women should not have sex for fun, men should not either, and that you're WRONG WRONG WRONG if you do love sex and have it for anything other than procreation.

One reason women were controlled against their will throughout the ages is this: If you keep the woman under your thumb and don't let her "stray", any kids she has are most likely yours. This was important when people willed vast tracts of land to their firstborn son. But who needs kids? You shouldn't probably have kids. I've already given my reasons.

This is a belief made up by men. Men who were frightened by the threat of not being able to "live on through their seed." Anyone can have a kid, but not anyone can write a great book or paint a great



painting that lasts through the ages. Non-gifted men just spit out kids to try to live forever.

And as I've said, many men are terrified of the immense power of their mate's climax. While she shudders involuntarily, arcs her back and digs her nails into the bed board, his little spurt is more of a simple tension release along the lines of a good fart...and about as interesting. This fills the man with such an impotent, silent fury that he feels he has to subdue her in other ways.

As soon as women realize that this is what's going on, they can quit being treated like third-class chattel.

This lie has been propagated for thousands of years, and it's time to **BREAK THE CYCLE**. If someone tells you that sex is bad, calmly tell them why it's not. If you can see there's no convincing them, do not argue. You might as well argue with a tree. Simply walk away, go somewhere else, and fuck the shit out of some willing woman. She'll thank you for it, and you'll be doing God's true will.

Politicians are really big on sex morality issues. It garnishes votes in the heartland of America. Sure, I agree that people who fuck kids should be shot. So should people who photograph kids naked.

But there is nothing two consenting adults can do in a bedroom that is anyone's business outside their bedroom. And there is nothing immoral about selling photos or videos to adults of those consenting adults doing the most filthy things you can possibly imagine.

In some states, it's still illegal for two adult men to have sex in their home. That's insane. It's illegal in Texas for an adult to sell a dildo shaped like a penis to an adult. And the US Department of Justice is currently trying to send "Buttman" (a very creative and artistic director and producer of fine adult anal sex movies) to jail for a LONG time for "moral turpitude" or some shit. Shame on the Department of Justice. Get a fucking life. Or better yet, get laid, really really well, and you'll have better things to do with your life.

As we see more and more lawmakers who try to outlaw gay sex getting *busted* for having gay sex, the truth will come out. As we see more and more "happily married" politicians and televangelists giving stirring speeches and sermons against moral turpitude, and later getting busted with hookers, the truth will come out. The truth is this: the people who bark the most about morals often have the most to hide.

One of my big problems with politicians is this: I can't vote for any of 'em. I'm actually fairly conservative when it comes to fiscal policies. I



like the economic policies of some Republicans better than those of most Democrats. But most Republican politicians are also very religiously Christian, and don't just wanna balance the budget, they wanna keep me from doing what I like to do in the bedroom. (The last Republican I know of who didn't vilify sex, other than vanilla married sex for procreation, was Barry Goldwater. And I was too young to vote - I was five months old when he ran for president.)

Show me a guy who wants to balance the budget, AND will let me say "fuck" on the Internet (and let me FUCK on the Internet), doesn't care what I do in the bedroom, is pro-choice, and I'll vote for him (or her).

Fuck 'em. I'm gonna throw away my vote and vote for Ralph Nader. Even though he won't balance the budget, probably quite the opposite. And he'd probably enact MORE laws, not LESS laws, which is NOT something I'd tend to support. But at least a lot of those laws will punish and control the piggy multinationals who dump battery acid into our rivers and air. Which may make the livable world end less quickly, which means I'll be around a few more years for fine fucking of the plump buffet of wonderful bitches on this earth, some of whom haven't even been born yet. (Unless I'm killed by a religious nut or a feminist, I'm going to die in bed at age 98 of a heart attack having sex with my wife, the pet, and two 30-year-old plump cuties who haven't even been born yet as I sit and type this. Their parents are probably alive, but are probably only about ten years old right now.)

And by the way, not a lot of people know this, but Ralph Nader is Arab. See? Told you I don't discriminate.

Anyway, sexual guilt is a lie. Have a conscience, be a good man, treat women well, but don't believe what you were told about sex being wrong. Because everything about that statement is all wrong.

GUILT – FEMINISTS

Some women think that BDSM is wrong. That it's anti-woman. That it's an example of the patriarchal society, of men's need to crush anything female.

It's not. And those women are wrong. Any woman has the right to choose to give away her control to someone she loves, and there's nothing wrong with that, in my book, (and in Dollie's book, and there are a lot of women who agree with her):

<http://www.askdollie.com/Testi-MOAN-ials.htm>



Also, BDSM includes women who dominant willingly submissive men, and there's a *lot* of both out there:

<http://tinyurl.com/3s6smp>

There also women who love to dominate women, and the women who love them:

<http://www.chantasbitches.com/>

I think that any woman who looks in from the outside at BDSM and judges it harshly is just responding to issues of her own, without understanding what she's looking at. (And don't get me started on men who agree with these women. Remember, any man who claims to be a feminist is just trying to get laid.)

"And that's all I have to say about that."

Which leads us to our closing arguments, eager male—>>>

CHAPTER 13

Closing Arguments

WHY I'M THE WAY I AM

I believe that everyone's personality is determined by their own actions more than circumstance. Or at least that people are not forced to be stuck in a rut their whole lives. I believe that everyone can rise above anything, and I have little patience for people who blame others for having a poor station in life.

That said, I love my life. I've had some heavy tribulations, but I've made a great big vat of yummy lemonade from it all. A lot of the worst things that have happened to me have directly or indirectly synthesized in me some of the traits that I love the most.

My childhood was not always great, but it made me wiser, it made me more creative, and it lead to me being a happy adult, a good husband and a dominant male. And reflecting on my story, I think there's no way I could have become anything *but* a dominant male.

My life (short version): I was born in 1964 in a small East Coast town to loving, conservative, religious, parents. I have two sisters and a brother. The whole family went to church every week.



My sisters were in high school and my brother was in college when I was born. I was an accident, but loved. (I remember asking my mother once, when I was 15, "Was I an accident?" She smiled, looked thoughtful and replied, "You were conceived and raised in love." I thought that all things considered, that was a great, and honest, answer.)

My sisters were foxy and showered me with attention. They totally doted over and adored me. (I've since then never felt as happy as I do whenever two foxy women are adoring me.) I was spoiled, my sisters let me get my way with everything.

I was very smart, and had a lot of teenage friends when I was in kindergarten. I could read well by age five, and was outspoken in school, at home, and everywhere. I was the little golden-haired whiz kid who could precociously rattle off facts about physics, chemistry, astronomy, history and music and at a very tender age.

My father and mother were decent parents, never abused me, weren't drunks, worked hard, provided for me, were very loving when they were home, but were both so busy working that I was alone a lot, especially after my sisters went off to college. I became a latchkey kid.

I loved books and went deep inside a quest for knowledge that continues to this day. In middle school, I'd cut class and go to the local library, so I could actually *learn* something. I consumed books, and even fetishized them. I liked to pet them and slept cuddling them. I dreamt of being a writer, and worked hard on it every day from about age ten. My teachers said, "You're a really good writer, but you'll never be a professional, because you can't spell." This was, of course, before computers and spell check came along and saved me.

I was smarter than all my classmates and smarter than some of my teachers. This frustrated me at school. Teachers would sometimes correct me when I was right - because I knew a word or understood a concept they did not comprehend.

As a kid, my family called me "Master Michael", like an English butler addressing a young heir. It helped convince me that I was more special than everyone else, and I still sort of feel that way. And how can you *not* grow up to be a dom when you're called "master" from age six on???

I have always been short (I'm 5' 5" now, tallest I've ever been), and was picked on by bullies in grade school and high school. One of my great pleasures in life is keeping track through old friends of how those bullies are doing. Most of them are miserable, alcoholic, saddled with



ungrateful adult kids and bitch wives, and have crappy manual labor jobs. I make art, get paid, work at home, and have the coolest, sexiest wife in the world.

My dad was rather submissive to my mother. She wasn't mean to him, but she made a lot of the decisions, despite being a classic 40s-50s lady, even into the 70s. My mother kept him under her thumb. I didn't like that, though I did like her. I fought with my mother a lot, we both had strong wills, but I felt a lot closer to her than I did to my father.

When I eight, I was molested by a teenage boy. We had oral sex with each other. He didn't force me, I did it willingly when he asked. I know now that an eight-year-old kid doesn't have the life experience to actually "consent", but I want to make it clear I was not forced.

Having sex with him made me hypersexual at a young age.

I also, a few weeks later, got felt up by a female teenage baby sitter, while she had a pot party with her friends in my parent's house. She French kissed me, stroked my hair, touched me all over my bare chest and kissed my neck in a romantic fashion, while her friends, two couples, watched, laughed, smoked pot, and made out with each other.

Around that same time, my parents got divorced. They'd been happily married for 37 years, then my father started cheating on my mother. This (and the divorces my three siblings all had later) soured me on marriage. I swore I would never marry.

I felt guilty because of my parent's divorce, felt it was my fault, maybe somehow because I had sex with that boy and made out with that girl. I had a lot of religious guilt about it. Like I'd made God angry with the original sin of being born. Like that's why my parents got divorced. I also thought I was in love with that girl who made out with me, and called her on the phone to ask her for a "date." She laughed at me and hung up.

I became very sad and fucked up, but still kept learning and kept loving to consume facts and knowledge at the library.

When I was nine, I found some Playboy magazines my brother had stored in the attic. When I was ten, I found some hardcore porn my dad had stashed. I loved it, and would often sneak peaks while he was out working. Then later, I heard my dad complaining about the "moral turpitude of television." I mentioned his porn stash. He was deeply shamed. And I got to keep watching TV. I was pushing an adult into doing my bidding, and loved it. I felt powerful.



My dad married the woman he was cheating with, a hypocritical harpy ("winged death spirit") who is an avid church attendee, but is really horrid to my father. She emotionally abuses him daily and sometimes abuses him physically. He just takes it. I was, and am, disgusted with this. I vowed never to let a woman push me around.

My step-monster (I refuse to refer to that witch as "step-mother") kept him from seeing me, and treated me like shit. My dad deferred to her, and he quit being a good father. Sure, he still paid support, and saw me on weekends, but it was never quite the same.

That witch finally grew tired of squeezing him dry, financially, emotionally and spiritually, and filed for divorce this year. Poor guy is 87 and having to go through that. Yet he's still trying to patch it up, get her back, even after she gave him a heart attack while keeping him from attending my daughter's funeral, then went into the ICU and threw things at him while he was in the hospital bed recovering from his heart surgery. She's 89, and in worse health than him, but will probably out-live him, just to have more time on earth to make people feel bad. If there's a hell, there's a special room reserved for her.

Age 11-30 is a blur of drugs and alcohol and cheap sex. I was not terribly happy, for many reasons, during that time. I smoked pot at 11, had sex and took LSD at 14, had great (vanilla) sex at 17, went to college, flunked out, moved to DC, then to San Francisco, started a hot rock band, got signed to Warner Brothers, toured the US and Europe, got into heroin, hit bottom, the band broke up. And somewhere in there, I started having kinky sex, but never really knew that there were women who wanted to be slaves until I met Dollie, at age 41. She taught me how to truly love a woman, and also taught me much of what I know about the practice of BDSM.

Age 30-now was sweeter than age 11-30, partially because I've been sober. I had a lot of good times, made a lot of friends and learned a lot of skills - computers, filmmaking, and became a professional author. And I finally came to peace with the world enough to share it with another person. I met Dollie and fell in love. Her love even made me throw away all my preconceptions about marriage. One day I said, "We're getting married, woman." She cried tears of joy, knelt, and two weeks later, we were at the courthouse exchanging vows.

Much of my journey, at least the sexual and dominant part, is explained in Dollie's book, *Diary of an S&M Romance*.

But I've still had some rough times since getting sober, including the death of my daughter, but that's probably another book. Suffice to say,



there's reasons I'm the way I am, I couldn't have turned out any other way, and if I had it to do over, I wouldn't have done anything different.

DON'T "OUT" ME

"ThornDaddy" is, obviously, not my real name. My parents didn't call me "little Thorny" as a child, and my wife calls me "Daddy", not "ThornDaddy."

I use the name "ThornDaddy" because I like to keep my public sex media life separate from my "normal" life. I make a living writing "straight", "normal" tech and media how-to books for major educational publishers. They know what I do on the side, but turn the other way. If it became vastly public that ThornDaddy is the guy who writes those books, they wouldn't hire me much any more.

That wouldn't be the end of the world. I've been looking to move into new careers for some time. But it's still working for the moment.

My wife is inextricably linked to me in all I do. I don't want her outted either. Nothing horrible would come of it, but I don't want the squares in the cubicle farm where she works to think of her as "that kinky lady."

I'm blackmail proof. The only sex I engage in outside my very happy marriage involves my wife and another woman.

Now that my daughter's dead (from leukemia), there really aren't many people in the world I'm afraid of upsetting with my little "hobby." I use my "kink" name, not my real name, online, only because it simplifies things in my mind. Dollie says she would have no qualms about it if I decided we should use our real names for this stuff. But I'm erring on the side of simplicity, simply because most of the world equates BDSM with serial killers, and I'm tired of explaining to individual blank food tubes that make up 90% of this big blue ball that it's not. I'd rather spend my time doing things like writing this book and doing our podcast, things that can help change stereotypes on a large global scale, without me having to talk to drones with half my I.Q. and twice my ego.

I have been "outted" a few times before, and it was fucked up of the person to do, but it didn't damage anything. And the only person in the world who would be hurt to know what I do is my 87-year-old Republican Baptist father, who has a heart condition. If someone wanted to spring my hobbies on him, the karma would be on them, not on me. And I still don't think he'd be terribly shocked, because he's read literature I've written in the past that was about sex and drugs, and he could see that it was loosely based on my life, and not entirely "fiction."



He called it "bone jarring", but didn't rip his shirt and turn his back.

But yeah, don't "out" me if you figure out who I am. If you do, it won't ruin anything for me, but you will be no friend of mine. And after all I've given you in this book, you should treat me as your friend, even if we never meet. (And we probably won't. I don't leave the house much. I stay home and have as much sex as humanly possible with two hot chicks. Why would I wanna leave that to go hang out with dudes? Even really cool dudes?)

I'M IMPOSSIBLE TO KILL

There are people who would want to harm me. I've already encountered people who've tried to harm me financially, or tried to terrorize me and steal my serenity with threats. Can't be done. There may be people who will go beyond threats, and people that driven can hire private detectives to find me. Some fanatics may want to actually physically harm me, or even kill me: sex-negative feminists and radical religious types come to mind. (I didn't say very nice things about the latter in this book, particularly about Catholics.) But hey...if they harmed me, I'd write another ten books about it, and get fucking *rich*. And use that money to further spread the message of love I'm already spreading here.

And as long as I'm sucking air (and for a long time after, through my secret foundation), I will continue to exercise all my constitutional rights. Especially my first- and second- and fourth-amendment rights, which each get many hours of exercise a day. They're quite healthy and strong.

As for killing me. Hell, that can't really be done. First of all, if you harm me, you'd martyr me. My wife, the pet, a few close friends, and many of my podcast fan minions around the globe have instructions to carry out the ThornDaddy Foundation's wishes and vigorously propagate my existing media (all my books, under both names, as well as the podcasts, movies, and all other media I bleed on a daily basis).

My wife and I have large life insurance policies, made first to each other, and in the event of both our deaths, to several trusted servants with the capability of carrying out my wishes on a much grander scale, and using that money as a mighty mustard seed to flood the world with my Word.

Most of my media is *already up* on BitTorrent, seeded by dozens of my untraceable followers around the world. If you kill me or harm me, it will be written up in the media, and send many



people who've never heard of me looking to check out my stuff.

The downloads are unstoppable. Like Joe said on "News Radio", "Trying to take something off the Internet is like trying to take pee out of a pool with a spoon."

You can kill me, but you cannot kill the love and message I'm spreading. In fact, if you do kill me, you'll be killing a Lernaean Hydra. Cutting off my head will grow many more just like me, ready to carry out my wishes.

Mark my words. If I'm ever found dead of a drug overdose, a car crash or an apparent suicide, it was murder.

And anyway, at 44 years of age (a little past the halfway point in the average male lifespan), I've already lived ten times as much as most men, so I'm pretty much ready when it comes. I had more great sex by the time I was 25 than most men have in a lifetime. I've published many books, made films, traveled the world, and have large worldwide audiences, both under my kink name and my real name. I've gone to greater heights (and greater depths – I was a heroin addict for years, and overcame that) than many celebrated poets, rock stars, philosophers, kings and holy men.

As a heroin addict, I lived to die. I died slowly, daily, for years. I overdosed and *died* three times, was revived by medics and roommates, and should be dead. I got sober at age 30, I really should have died before that. So every breath I take from age 30 on, is gravy - a fucking unexpected gift from the Universe.

Then my daughter died at age 22, two years ago. She was a great person. When she died, I plunged into the worst depression imaginable. Couldn't sleep, couldn't eat, couldn't think, about anything, except the darkness.

I still think of her every day, a lot. But I have transcended my darkness, and am able to function again.

If I can survive that, I can survive anything, even pain or death.

LEAVE ME ALONE

Most humans should be ground into cat food. At least 90% of all humans are, in the words of the Book of the Subgenius, "Blank Food Tubes."



I previously mentioned *The Golden Floppy Disc of Redemption*. People on this list have helped me, and will be spared when I run the world and am having my soldiers grind most people into food for my many cats. It's here if you want to look at it:

www.askdollie.com/goldenDisc.htm

It takes a lot to be on this list. And I have a different list, that is not public, of the people who will be the first ones ground up for my kitties. Don't bug me and you won't get on that list.

Don't write me. Instead, please post on the blog, StinkFight.com. If you're a prick in my world, even my Web world, you'll be ground into cat food. I especially do not spar with males, I avoid them, and if they're a bother, turn it over to the police. Same with women. I've done this.

If you're just a fan, and not a stalker, you may send a short e-mail telling me how I've changed your life for the better, but please understand that I'm a busy guy. I may not write back, and if I do, it's going to be short, and not ongoing. I'm a little more lenient with females, especially subs, because I love females. But even that isn't going to go on and on and on. You can write us through StinkFight.com.

Keep in mind, if you ask questions, we may just answer them on the podcast (or our "vanilla" podcast, at www.NestLandia.com), and may use the questions, and our answer, in a future book. And by sending us questions, you agree to this, without any compensation. We're all about the media, want to spread love, and don't want anyone's desires to get in our way. If you come into *our* house, you play by *our* rules.

WOMEN ROCK

When I was 15, I signed my soul to the devil. I didn't sign the standard "rich and famous" contract. I just said "I want to travel the world, make great art, and be able to fuck any woman I can make laugh." I signed the contract in my own blood. The agreement with my imaginary devil was that I would be able to do all that, and before I turned 44, I would die and the devil would get my soul.

I later freaked out about it, and took the contract to a Catholic priest. He read it and told me that if I read the Bible and believed in Jesus Christ, the contract would be annulled.

I became a devout Christian for several years. But I eventually stopped believing in The Word, and formed a cosmology of my own creation, and that cosmology didn't have much room for The Church.

In the back of my mind though, I've always held a tiny worry that



maybe the contract was real, and maybe the devil was going to kill me and take me.

This book was finished right before my 44th birthday.

If you tune in to our podcast at www.AskDollie.com after May 29, 2008, and I'm still alive, well, fucking and podcasting, then I've beat the devil. (I guess then I can say that I merely pawned my soul, rather than selling it.)

But I've traveled the world, and I can still fuck any woman I can make laugh. And I still make great art.

Writing this book was extremely personal, it almost felt like an invasion of my privacy, of my soul, to share so much with so many strangers. But it had to be done.

And I entered an almost trance-like state to write it. I didn't leave the house, barely slept, went in and out of short cat naps after long bouts of working. Sleep melded into waking, the separations became blurred. It was a drug-like state without drugs (except way too much caffeine and nicotine, and my body's own sex endorphins). The last couple weeks, I was wearing a slip, pantyhose and pumps while writing, to help understand the inside of the mind of a woman. I cuffed my leg to the toilet bar on the wall while the wife was at work, and Flex-O-Pleased my asshole. I beat off up to 20 times a day. And at moments, in my mind, in my soul, I *became* a woman. A submissive woman, submitting to ThornDaddy.

This manuscript felt like it was written *through* me. It only took me six weeks to write, proof and publish. (This couldn't have been done without Dollie's proofreading, editing and love. Our nest is a self-contained worldwide art factory. This book is but one of many projects we've done together, and we plan to do many more.) I've never written a book this good, or even written *any* book so quickly. I felt like I was channeling it from the gods. (Or perhaps the goddesses. Or more likely, both. My theology pictures god as "parents" more than just "father" or "mother".)

I stayed locked in The Internet, slept three or four hours a night, and let the words *flow*, stopping only to fuck my wife and change my clothes (I was working at such a fevered pace that I was actually sweating from writing). I was a *conduit* for these words, not the author. They appeared to have been channeled from somewhere higher. I'm on a mission from Pod, and this is my *New Nestament*.



I liked finishing days before my 44th birthday. It gave me a chance to reflect. I've lived quite a life.

This book is great and I have an excellent literary agent. We could have easily gotten it put out by a major publisher. But that takes too long, and the messages in this book are too important, too relevant, to wait. Also, a publisher, in my experience, would have monkeyed with it, cut some parts that were most important to me (like this chapter, most likely). So we self-published, using money from George W. Bush's "economic stimulus incentive", (\$1,200 to couples making less than \$150,000.) That \$1,200 bucks just about covered the set up and first small print run. Thank you George Dubya, for financing our fuck book. Thank you sir, indeed.

I go to sleep quickly each night, and sleep soundly and contented. But I jump out of bed every morning, often before I've even slept a full eight hours. I call it "reverse insomnia", but it's not a bad thing. I jump out of bed because each day is full of so many fun challenges, so many chances to use the skills I've been given, and the things I've learned. I'm as happy writing a great book as I am making sweet love to my wife and the pet. And we all love petting the three kitty cats who run around this home.

I love my life.
And I love my wife.

I love each new day, mainly because of the wonders of women, the beauty of sex, and how my amazing slave Dollie brightens my every moment.

This book is my birthday present to myself and to my wife. But in a larger sense, it's my love song, and my gift, to every woman in the world who wants it.

This book is written to be read by men, and I hope some men have found something useful in it. But I really wrote the book for *women*, because women are so breathtakingly astonishingly perfect. I wrote this book for men to help the women of the world, to give more men more tools to take better care of their women.



So, eager male...I'll close this book the same way I opened it, by telling you this: women are too amazing to be anything *but* proof that there is a god.

ThornDaddy
Spring 2008
Los Angeles

APPENDIX 1

Interviews with Seven Kinky Women About What They Want and Need

Compiled and edited by ThornDaddy

SO...If you really want to know "what women want", from *women*, not just from a majestic fucker of women like me, you need to *ask* women. So Dollie and I wrote up some good questions and sent out information packets to my global empire of fans, friends and groupies, and got these illuminating results to my armchair Kinsey report.

INTERVIEWS WITH:

Dollie Llama
the pet
Sienna S
Kitty
Jennifer Neko
Amy-Rose
Mistress Velvet

>-----<



INTERVIEW 1:

**Name: Dollie Llama,
a.k.a. Mrs. ThornDaddy, a.k.a. the wife, a.k.a. the slave, a.k.a.
Daddy's little cum toilet, a.k.a. Daddy's little slime tube.**

>>Tell us a little bit about yourself please...age/hobbies, schooling, married/divorced/in long term relationship or not, seeing anyone now, what is your current relationship like?

I'm 49, a paralegal by profession and a domestic and sex slave by inclination. My main hobby, although it's much much more than simply a hobby, is podcasting with my majestic husband and Master, ThornDaddy. Our podcast is "Submission and Coffee" and it's available free at at AskDollie.com. I also enjoy reading, writing, and caring for Daddy (my special and exclusive name for ThornDaddy) and our three cats.

As for relationships, I'm relatively newly married (just about two years) and loving it, but gleefully share Daddy with our girlfriend "the pet." My marriage is based upon a strong BDSM Master/slave dynamic, and our girlfriend is also submissive to Daddy. Daddy and I characterize our relationship as "a nation of two", meaning we are complete in ourselves, but do enjoy the spice and fun that being sexual with select other females brings to our life.

>>How long have you been aware of sexual feelings in your own body? What were your first feelings?

I cannot recall a time when I was not aware of sexual feelings. I may not have been able to recognize the feelings as sexual at the time, but in retrospect, they clearly were. For example, when I was about 3 or 4, our house had a large picture window in the living room that faced the street. The window sill was about 6 inches above the floor. I had an overwhelming urge to strip naked, and display myself in that window. After contemplating this for a while, I did exactly that: stripped, climbed onto the window sill, and stood there, facing the street, with my arms spread wide and a smile plastered on my face. I felt gloriously exposed. The thrill was definitely sexual; I am an unabashed exhibitionist to this day.

My maiden great aunt, who lived with us, found me there and was horrified. I can still remember how she sputtered and shuttled me away and back into clothing. When my parents came home, she was red in the face while explaining what I had done. My parents weren't pleased, but I do not remember what, if anything, they did to punish or teach me.



>>When did you first masturbate?

At about age 6, I discovered the joy of lying in the bathtub with the water on full blast, pounding down on my genitals. I also found I could use my pelvic muscles to draw water from the bath into my vagina, and then expel it with some force, with which I amused myself by feeling the water rush by my fingers, lingering just at the entrance to my pussy. I know I also rubbed my genitals, enjoying the sensations, but I don't believe I had an actual orgasm from any play until I was 8 or 9.

Once I could climax, I masturbated any time I could be alone, definitely every night before sleep. I stole into my parents' room at about age eleven, where I found an old-style vibrator which fitted over the hand, and used it with great pleasure.

>>When did you first have intercourse?

I lost my virginity about three months after having started high school, in ninth grade. He was two years older, but also a virgin. He argued with me, after the fact, accusing me of not being virgin as I didn't bleed or cry. He didn't like my explanation that some women do not have pain or bleeding, and also, that I had probably technically deflowered myself with household objects I used to masturbate. He also seemed intimidated by a girl that seemed so clearly at ease with her sexuality, and knew how to assist in reaching her own climax, which I did, more than once, while we screwed.

>>Are you bisexual?

Yes. Although I do have a strong preference for men, and could live happily without a female sex partner. However, I have always had an attraction to women, and freely and without guilt, played sex games with willing girlfriends at a comparatively young age, up to and including rubbing our groins together until I climaxed.

Puberty and post-adolescence were primarily devoted to boys, and I continued in that vein, with a few choice exceptions, until about 8 years ago. Before I met Daddy, I resumed my occasional fling with women, and now, with our girlfriend, the pet, I am able to indulge regularly.

>>How orgasmic are you?

Absurdly so, sometimes *too* orgasmic. At times, I cum so much while Daddy's fucking me I become overwhelmed, and pass out. It's fun. But I also can climax from simply rubbing Daddy's back and listening to him groan with pleasure, after we have sex and I'm still "primed." I



also generally cum at least once every time I blow him. In neither of these cases is it necessary for me to have direct genital stimulation to bring on the orgasm. If he wants, Daddy can make me cum just from talking to me, particularly by calling me "good girl" and telling me to "cum for Daddy" over and over.

>>How many times a week do you like to have intercourse?

With me, it's probably more accurate to ask me how many times a *day* I'd like to have intercourse. The answer is, as often as I, and Daddy, can, which can be ten times or more if we're feeling particularly fevered. Practically, I have intercourse as often as Daddy wishes, usually more than once per day. Usually many more times than once (Yay!)

>>How many times a week do you masturbate?

Between 7 and 30. Really, it varies tremendously. Some depends upon what Daddy needs me to be doing at any given time, but also, sometimes it just feels a bit lonely, and so I'd rather store up the energy for the next time Daddy summons me for sex, sex in whatever format he chooses.

>>Are you a squirter?

Although there were odd times in the past that it happened, in a small way, just in the last three months or so have I become a routine squirter. It seems one day the faucet just got turned on. To some extent, I can now control when it happens, but most of the time I just go with whatever my body wants to do – why inhibit pleasure? (Although I can really flood while squirting, and it can be kind of a hassle, wet beds, towels, etc. Yet, we're learning to accommodate it.)

>>How do you feel about anal sex?

Love it. It's a whole different sensation of being taken, and that's always a good thing. I don't have a lot of the "Ooo, it's taboo" feeling that I've heard others describe, I just like it 'cause it feels awesome. I like the sense of "fullness", and triggering of different nerve endings I get from anal sex.

That said, it has to be *clean* anal sex. Nice, thorough enema beforehand, and no messy scat.

>>How do you feel about sex toys? Which ones do you like?

Sex toys are great. Good when I'm by myself, even more fun when



someone is using them on me, or I use them on another.

My favorite masturbatory combination is this: Hitachi Magic Wand on low on my clit, a nice midsize butt plug, and a lovely, very long, but not unnaturally thick, realistically-shaped dildo in my pussy. If I'm really going for it, add some very strong, nasty nipple clamps. Sheer bliss!

I also like my jackrabbit vibrator. It has a little vibrating jackrabbit on the shaft. It also has a bendable shaft that rotates, very unusual sensation. Got it because the pet had one and it looked so fun!

And, our newest discovery, the Flex-o-Pleaser: a vibrating bullet on a thin, flexible wand, powered by batteries. The bullet is angled at about 30 degrees. Makes a great anal vibe - for me while Daddy fucks me (he calls me his vibrating robo-whore), or for him, while I blow him. Twirling it is mindblowing.

>>Do you use condoms?

Not with Daddy, of course. But yes, he uses them with new partners. We are fluid bonded with the pet, and so don't use them with her. pet is not exclusively sexual with us, so she uses them with anyone other than us.

>>Are you kinky?

Yes. Very.

>> If so, bottom/top sub/slave/dom/master, switch, or what?

Slave. No question. Although I can, and have, topped others, even Daddy to some extent, *but only when Daddy has specifically told me to do it, and what to do.* That way, I don't feel like I'm really topping, which might just feel too weird.

>>What does kink entail for you?

To me, the word "kink" feels like a label, especially since what conventional wisdom may call kink can encompass so very many things, and not all of them compatible. It also carries a stigma of people joined by common aberrations. I don't consider what I do or like to be aberrant. Nothing I do with Daddy, or any other sex partner, is done with the intention of causing long-term harm in any way, emotionally, physically, or socially. It is done with love, respect, caring, passion and lust. That it incorporates sensations or practices that may not reflect what the majority does, does not make it worthy of censure or segregation.



Philosophy aside, what I like is to submit, to give over my will to another I trust implicitly. I like to feel physically overpowered, overwhelmed. I love pain, when it's administered by someone who understands that the pain amplifies sensation, exhilarates the mind and body, releases endorphins, and sends me into a different state of consciousness. Pain can come from many methods: caning, flogging, whipping, paddling, heat or cold, pressure (like nipples clamps), abrasion, a slap in the face or a spank on the ass. It's all good, and I like it harsh.

I like to be restrained, as it frees my mind when my body is contained. Restraint comforts me, makes me feel safe, secure, and closely held.

I like to be blindfolded – all my other senses are thrown into overdrive.

I like to be objectified, used by Daddy for sex like a receptacle, as he says, "his little cum-dumpster." Or as furniture, like a footstool, or table to hold his coffee or ashtray.

I enjoy public display, like when Daddy takes me, or me and the pet, to a dungeon, and whips us, strokes us, shows us off, has us blow him, or makes us cum, all in front of others.

I like to serve. I get soul-deep satisfaction from doing all I can for Daddy, whether it's cooking or cleaning, rubbing his back and feet, fetching anything he needs, or blowing him whenever he chooses.

I have fetishes: semen, lingerie, and high-heeled shoes. While I can enjoy sex when those items are not present, sex is better when I'm dressed up, and one or more orifices are full of semen.

I love it when Daddy talks dirty to me, calls me names, and tells me just what he wants, and that what I get is up to him. I love to be humiliated, within certain boundaries, by Daddy: watched while I'm on the toilet or giving myself an enema (or being given one by Daddy), or peed on by Daddy when I'm in the shower.

None of these things would be fun, or possible, with someone I didn't trust. Some acts would require me to be in love in order to have sufficient trust in my partner, such as the more emotional games, but even the purely physical acts require trust to enjoy.

>>What's it take to get into your pants?

Intelligence, sex appeal (to me), a sense of humor, an inquisitive mind, an appreciation for beauty, kinkiness that jives with mine, lack of entanglements like jealous spouses or lovers, a love of all things feline,



a distrust of humans in the generic and authority in the specific, kindness, gentleness, goodness and respect behind the dominance.

That's my short list for someone I'd fuck more than once. Which is, of course, theoretical, because I fuck no man other than Daddy.

There have been times when all it took was for someone to be available, capable and appealing. Thank goodness those times are past.

As for women getting into my pants, well, I leave that all up to Daddy to decide, and only offer input if I think he's missed something important. He knows my feelings, and respects them, when they aren't horribly in conflict with his own. (And in general, I have no conflicts with his ideas, so it's all good.)

>>What do you like in a sex partner?

I love that Daddy takes care of me. Especially when I was convalescing from shoulder surgery for a bone spur and torn rotator cuff. In fact, I had been experiencing problems with it for ten years, but put off dealing with it, and Daddy prodded me into taking care of it. He is my protector and mentor.

He was the sweetest man ever, actually waited on me all the time during the recuperation. But he's always sweet to me, though I do the housework when I'm not laid up in bed.

Of course, kinkiness, dominance, intelligence, willingness to learn, creativity, passion, lust, great smell, tasty semen, all come into play.

>>Describe the sexiest person you know.

My Daddy.

>>What do you dislike in a potential partner?

Stupidity. Narrow-mindedness. Lack of manners. Lack of vocabulary, verbal or experience.

>>What's a deal killer (i.e. things that would make you NEVER willing to have sex with someone?)

Dishonesty. Lack of respect, for me or themselves. Horribly diseased or otherwise unclean. A spouse or partner that is unaware of me, or someone like me, in their partner's life.

>>If you are (or were) single, would you consider having sex with



ThornDaddy and Dollie Llama?

Um, I already am. Both of them. God they're hot.

>>How many men have you slept with?

No way to know for sure. Last time I had a running total was before I got married the first time at 21, and it was over 150. Since then, I guess there may have been as many as 30 or 40. (And I was celibate for 13 years following the end of my first marriage, only back in the game for 3 years before I met Daddy, and I've slept with no other man except Daddy ever since. I have no need or desire to. Although doing the swing party thing for a couple years before I met him did up the count quite rapidly.)

>>How many women?

That's a really good question, and I could only guess. Maybe 20 or 25? Could be more. Probably is. I really like bisexual women, but have a overwhelming preference for men, and don't really care much for lesbians – they're too often anti-men.

>>Have you had group sex? Please give details.

Lots of times. Too many to describe all of them.

Most memorable? I was seventeen, had just finished high school. I met two guys that were best friends, college roommates home for the summer. Both were stunning, one blonde, one dark. We had some earth-shaking vanilla sex, many different times, over that summer. But the best thing was their comfort with each other, naked and aroused. They didn't exactly have sex with each other, but they had no qualms about casually brushing against each other. We even managed to have double penetration sex (anal/vaginal) a couple times – being young, flexible and athletic – it was great.

I've also had group sex with me as the only woman with seven guys. Twice I can think of. Once in high school, on a "dare" by my nasty, domineering boyfriend (same guy who took my virginity) – and all his buddies. Me and his friends got along just great, much sweating and cumming, but he got intimidated by it all, and ended up in the corner, almost in tears. The second time was while I was swinging. I was "dating" a voyeur, and he set up a scene with me and seven other men, which he directed and watched. Very hot. We drew quite an audience. Loving semen as much as I do, there's something very special about having more than one guy cum on you while another one is fucking you



silly, and you're blowing another, and jerking a third...

I've done scenes in dungeons with more than one partner. Not always actual sex, but if you know how those things work, it's as close as you can come without actually doing it.

And of course, since I met Daddy, we've had many, many interludes with other women, and now especially with the pet. Of all of the group sex I've had, I like the sex I have with Daddy and the pet the best.

>>What's the kinkiest thing you've ever done?

I can't answer that. So much goes into something being kinky, and what was incredibly hot one time, might be silly another. Um, such as eating yogurt and fruit out of one of my pumps as a humiliation exercise, then wearing them while I masturbated for the top's amusement – it was hot when it was done to me, but reading about it just sounds really goofy.

And sex, well, sex to me isn't kinky, really, no matter what goes on. It just two or more people doing what feels really good to them at the moment.

>>Describe the best time you've ever had sexually.

All the "special" times are special in their own ways. So much depends upon the time and place and who I was at the time. Not sure I could pick just one.

However, almost every time Daddy fucks me feels like the most amazing thing I've ever experienced. He's an artist, a god in our bed.

But I am put in mind of one recent episode with Daddy and the pet...Daddy fucked both of us, but instead of having us side-by-side, he had one of us lie between the legs of the other with our head resting on the other woman's pussy as she sat up propped on pillows. Then Daddy fucked the girl in the middle, while the other one kissed, touched, teased, pinched and rubbed the other, and Daddy too. We switched places after a bit. The girl not being fucked also got to use a vibrator on herself. I know I came so much, and squirted so much, that the pet's hair and neck were soaked by the time Daddy came in her. the pet told us afterwards that when Daddy was fucking me, my head bumped over and over "just right" against the vibrator and really put her over the top. It was incredible, and was the best three-way sex I've ever had.

>> How important is a man's scent to you? Do you like men to go



without washing for a day, without wearing deodorant, without wearing cologne? Or do you like men better when they're well-scrubbed, deodorized, and / or wearing cologne?

I would be very turned off by any man that stank because he was unclean, or was drenched in cologne (even if it was a cologne I liked).

I have always preferred men to smell like men – a bit sweaty, just *alive*. It's sexy. Something about that smell goes straight to my pussy.

>>How are love and sex connected?

Love makes sex better for me, but I don't need to love my partner in order for the sex to be blazing hot.

>>How are sex and commitment related?

If you asked me this before HIV/AIDS I would probably have answered "Not at all." Now, I think if you're going to have sex with someone, fluid bonded or not, partners owe it to each other to be honest and upfront about their experiences and any issues. To me, honesty is a commitment.

No, I don't believe I have to be bound to someone in order to have sex with them. Of course, this IS kinda theoretical, as Daddy now decides who I have sex with other than him.

>>How important is kink to you when choosing a partner? Do you require kink in a long-term partner?

I am a kinky woman. I know this like I know my name. Yes, I could have hot sex without kink, but I need kink in my life in order to be fulfilled and happy in the long run. And their kinks have to complement my own.

>>Would you look outside a happy vanilla relationship to satisfy your kink needs? With or without your partner/s knowledge / approval?

That's really tough to answer. I frankly can't imagine myself in a vanilla relationship. But I guess I'd have to say, if I were committed to someone not kinky, in order for them to know me well enough to love me and me love them, we would have to have an agreement that would allow me to "get my kink fix", even if the kink were without sex. But it would have to be with my partner's knowledge and approval. I cannot live a lie to my partner.



>>How important are looks?

Not as important as the other qualities on my list (see "What's it take to get into your pants?"). Sure, I need to find something appealing in the way a lover looks, but the beauty that matters is really in the mind, not the body.

And no, I don't say that just because I'm a middle-aged, plump woman, and the antithesis of most conventional standards of feminine beauty. I've always believed this. (Even as a plump teenager, lol.)

>>How important is good kissing?

Important, but not ultimately so. If someone can fuck, and is most of the other things I think are important, then I could partner with someone I didn't love to kiss passionately.

>>Describe good kissing?

I helped Daddy formulate the "HOW TO KISS " section in Chapter Six. Pretty much all I have to say on the subject is there. Except maybe, if I love to kiss someone, it's something I just can't get enough of. Conversely, much of the time when Daddy fucks me I am not allowed to kiss or touch him, and I love it. I love being controlled by Daddy that way.

>>How important is penis size?

Sure I'm glad I've had some opportunities to play with very large penises, but frankly, as a steady diet and given that I love to be fucked REALLY hard, I prefer a man with a moderate size penis. It reaches all the right places, feels nice and full, but doesn't leave me too sore to want more and more and more.

That, and I think normal size penises just look better erect. And I love the look of an erect cock. Too many of the outsized penises I've seen don't seem to ever get as hard as normal ones. That, and too big is hard to get down your throat when blowing him, and I also love the feeling of a cock down my throat. Since I met Daddy, I've started to cum regularly while blowing him. Just getting him hard and down my throat makes me cum; no external stimulation needed. It's like my throat becomes my pussy. Very cool.

>>How important is it to you that a man go down on you?

Not tremendously. Yes, I like it, and would miss it if it never happened, but it's not something I think of first when with a man.



With women it's a bit different – I love having a girl lick me, or licking her.

>>Do you go down on guys?

Absolutely! I love sucking cock, and do it gleefully whenever Daddy wants. With my semen fetish, it's hard to know if I like cum in my mouth or in my pussy better. The mouth might be just a bit ahead, more senses to savor it with. And so very fun to transfer it mouth-to-mouth to someone else – like the pet.

>>How important is honesty and respect?

Without these two things, there can be no relationship. Period.

>>Are you a feminist?

Yes. I believe in social, economic, and political parity for all sexes.

I also believe in the right to choose to surrender that parity under conditions I agree to.

Both those facets represent true freedom to me.

For a longer answer, I refer you to *Diary of an S&M Romance*.

>>Is it possible to be submissive to a man and still be a feminist?

Yes. I am.

>>What do you think of "SUBMISSION AND COFFEE",
BDSM podcast from a happily married couple <http://www.askdollie.com>
?

What's not to love? Daddy and I (and the pet) are amusing, intelligent, entertaining and informative. And dead sexy. I love that Daddy has brought me into his world and made me a part of his art. I was so shy at first, but now I'm always ready to podcast, fuck for strangers I'll never meet, and yack about anything under the sun with my brilliant Daddy. He's so talented in so many fields. I love his mind, and I love that he can figure out how to do *anything* related to media, computers, or reaching the world, and usually masters it the first or second day he finds it.

I never believed I would be someone who would get fan mail, let alone



someone that people would write daily and say things like "You've changed my life for the better, and helped me understand myself and my lover better." It blows me away. I still get teary eyed, and I'm grateful to Daddy, and still constantly amazed with each new e-mail. I love "changing the world from our bedroom", as Daddy puts it.

>>What advice do you have for men trying to meet women to fuck?

Read this book. Twice.

Quit trying too hard, you'll look desperate.

Look for women you *like*, and who *like you*, not just ones you find sexy.

>>What advice do you have for men to fuck women better?

Read this book. Twice.

Care about her, and you'll do the right thing.

>>What advice do you have for men trying to hold on to women?

Read this book. Twice.

Pick the right woman, or women.

Treat her the way you'd want to be treated – honestly and with respect.

With love if it exists, with tenderness if it doesn't.

>-----<

INTERVIEW 2:

Name: the pet

(the pet is the wonderful girlfriend that Dollie and I play with and hang out with about every other weekend. By the way, her answers are fairly short, because she was typing with her thumbs on her iPhone while flying on a plane to go back east for her birthday. —ThornDaddy)

>>Tell us a little bit about yourself please.

I'm 38 and a long time video gamer. I'm also heavily into arts and crafts, drawing, painting, floral design, etc. These days now I'm dating ThornDaddy and Dollie Llama, the sexiest couple I've ever met and I'm ecstatic to be involved with them.

>>How long have you been aware of sexual feelings in your own body?



What were your first feelings?

I honestly can't remember.

>>When did you first masturbate?

Can't remember.

>>When did you first have intercourse?

When I was 16 my mother asked if I wanted to go on birth control. I was still a virgin at the time, but would have been too embarrassed to ask her after the fact so I went on the pill, then figured what the hell. So a friend of mind and I had a barely memorable time on a couch by a fire in the woods.

>>Are you bisexual?

I had a bisexual experience with a friend many many moons ago. It ended up ruining our friendship and until recently the curiosity has been there but I hadn't acted on these feelings. Before ThornDaddy and Dollie Llama I was involved with another couple but it felt very strained and I wasn't comfortable with her. But I did it to make my Dom happy, and alleviate some of the curiosity. Now with Dollie, I enjoy it immensely and it feels completely natural and just right.

>>How orgasmic are you?

I'm very orgasmic, I tend to have one right on top of another and have been known to have rolling orgasms that can last up to 20 minutes. I'm also a squirter but I have to be relaxed enough and be in the right position.

>>How many times a week do you like to have intercourse?

My libido depends on the partner I'm with. If the person I'm with isn't very sexually oriented than sex isn't my top priority. With a person who is very sexual, I'm up for sex as often as we can.

>>How many times a week do you masturbate?

Normally once a day in the shower, but since being with the ThornDaddys I've been masturbating at night at least 2-3 times a week.

>>How do you feel about anal sex?



I do enjoy anal, and can squirt from my pussy from it. Unfortunately it occasionally causes cramping and bowel issues for days afterwards.

>>How do you feel about sex toys? Which ones do you like?

LOVE EM LOVE EM LOVE EM. Did I mention that I *love* them? They could never replace real sex with a person, but they definitely can enhance sex, and give a different kind of orgasm than a penis can. My personal favorite is a jackrabbit vibrator.

>>Do you use condoms?

I'm an avid user of condoms. There is nothing that could put an end to my fun faster than an incurable disease. I am fluid bonded with ThornDaddy, but use condoms with anyone else I'm with.

>>Are you kinky?

I'm kinkier than some and less kinky than others. If I had to answer yes or no I'd say "yes."

>>If so, bottom/tom sub/slave/dom/master, switch, or what?

I lean toward the submissive side, but only the right type of Dom can bring that out of me. With other, more "vanilla" relationships, I'm usually the more experienced aggressor, so I suppose in certain circumstances I'd be considered a top, but I MUCH prefer someone else to take the lead.

>>What's it take to get into your pants?

Plain and simple...you have to get into my head before you get into my pants. If you're handsome but stupid? Sorry...move along.

>>What do you like in a sex partner?

Imagination, respect and good communication skills

>>Describe the sexiest person you know.

ThornDaddy and Dollie Llama are the sexiest people I know. Each alone radiates an aura of sexuality that you can sense just being around them, but together the vibe is so tangible it's something you can see, smell and taste.

>>What do you dislike in a potential partner?



I dislike the same things in a potential partner that I do in a potential friend. Because if I can't relate to someone as a friend then it doesn't matter how good the sex is. I will be bored VERY quickly.

>>What's a deal killer (i.e. things that would make you NEVER willing to have sex with someone?)

Lack of trust or respect would be a deal killer for me.

>>If you are (or were) single, would you consider having sex with ThornDaddy and Dollie Llama?

I am single and I AM having sex with ThornDaddy and Dollie!

It's odd to simply say "I am single" because that kinda downplays what I have with the ThornDaddys. That's a problem with polyamory, there really aren't terms to properly describe it. There's no greeting card that says "Happy anniversary, wonderful married couple I have sex with!"

My relationship with the ThornDaddys is not complicated, but it's complicated to describe....I'm somewhere between fuck buddy and girl-friend. This is what we've all three come to, in order to protect their relationship, and also to keep my own heart happy.

We three have spectacular sex, but they also cuddle me, nurture me, mentor me, watch movies with me, and take me out on dates. I love it. And we're all friends, and talk and e-mail a lot when I'm not there.

I am free to have sex with others, but have to ask ThornDaddy first. Fortunately, he's very giving with that permission, and I appreciate that.

>>How many men have you slept with?

I don't remember exact numbers, the 80s were sort of a blur. If I had to guess I'd say somewhere close to 50.

>>How many women?

Three, including Dollie

>>Have you had group sex? Please give details.

Mostly with TD and Dollie, but once or twice with my last Dom and his alpha.



>>What's the kinkiest thing you've ever done?

Listen to the episodes on "SUBMISSION AND COFFEE", all the things I've done on there are the kinkiest things I've ever done, including having it podcasted all over the world to strangers. But I suppose the unrecorded night when the ThornDaddys took me to the dungeon would have to be the moment that comes to mind. I NEVER would have thought that shy little me would be able to have sex in a room filled with people watching, some of them masturbating hungrily as they watched.

>>Describe the best time you've ever had sexually.

Again, listen to SAC episodes because each time I visit the ThornDaddys, it gets better and better. So by the time this book is released in a few weeks, my answer wouldn't apply anymore. There will be something else to top everything.

>>How are love and sex connected?

You can have sex with people you don't love, and love someone you don't have sex with, but it's when the two merge that you get something that transcends both.

>>How important is kink to you when choosing a partner? Do you require kink in a long-term partner?

It's not the most important factor, and until recently it wasn't even a consideration in choosing a partner. Now that I've let myself open up a bit more sexually it's moved up a bit further on the list.

>>Would you look outside a happy vanilla relationship to satisfy your kink needs? With or without your partner/s knowledge / approval?

I'm a very honest person and would talk with my partner(s) about looking elsewhere to satisfy those needs - but I would never go behind their back. I can honestly say, other than kissing, I've never cheated on anyone and am not about to start now.

>>How important are looks?

Looks are a plus, but are definitely not the most important aspect.

>>How important is good kissing?

Kissing is definitely important to me. It can raise or lower the intensity



level of the whole experience.

>>Describe good kissing.

Good kissing happens when you can tell that your partner is consciously aware of what they're doing with their tongue, not sloppy, but rather teasing, tasting, torturing you into wanting more.

>>How important is penis size?

I think men put too much emphasis on penis size. There is no too small or too large. It's all a matter of finding the pussy that's a perfect fit.

>>How important is it to you that a man go down on you?

Receiving oral is a treat. It's a feeling that can't be recreated while masturbating. So it's wonderful to find someone who enjoys giving, but it's not deal breaker if the person has talents in other areas.

>>Do you go down on guys?

I do, I love cock and can lose myself licking, sucking, kissing and tasting. I love taking my time, enjoying the texture, feeling it harden in my hand and mouth. OK damnit, I'm stuck on an airplane and needing to masturbate now. Occupied?!?!?!? Fucking humans! As ThornDaddy says, "Grind them into cat food!" Finish up in there! I'm having an clitoral emergency!!.....

>>How important is honesty and respect?

.....OK...now that I've rubbed one out in the airplane bathroom, I can get my mind back on the questions. Honesty and respect are the most important things in ANY relationship.

>>Are you a feminist?

No, I wouldn't consider myself to be.

>>Is it possible to be submissive to a man and still be a feminist?

I don't see why not.

>>What do you think of "SUBMISSION AND COFFEE", BDSM podcast from a happily married couple <http://www.askdollie.com> ?

I *love* the podcast! I'm still squeamish 'bout being on it though, and



have a hard time listening to the episodes I'm on.

>>What advice do you have for men trying to meet women to fuck?

Be honest, have a sense of humor, and don't play games.

>>What advice do you have for men to fuck women better?

Pay attention to your lover, learn to read her body signs, try new things, don't be boring or selfish, even with a woman who is existing to serve you.

>>What advice do you have for men trying to hold on to women?

Same as above.

>>How important is a man's scent to you?

I prefer a man to smell manly, musky and like a man. A bit of cologne as an intermingling scent along with the natural smell is OK, but cologne that is so strong that it overpowers and overwhelms is a complete turnoff.

>-----<

INTERVIEW 3:

Name: Kitty

(Kitty is a fan of our Submission and Coffee podcast. We really like her, and have exchanged a bunch of e-mails with her.
-ThornDaddy)

>>Tell us a little bit about yourself please.

"A rose by any other name would still smell as sweet." I am who I am, but I use an alias when dealing with the BDSM scene. Kitty is my scene name. I'm 19 and have been thinking about the lifestyle for two years now. I live in Canada. I'm a student, studying psychology, with ambitions of becoming a psychotherapist. I'm a writer and have a bachelor's degree in creative writing, specifically, children's literature. I volunteer as a leader and counsellor in the community specifically with kids and youth.

I'm in a long-term relationship with my



boyfriend/Daddy/Dom/Master/Protector, and we are a long-distance couple. He's 40. We met online and the distance was helping at first - letting us feel each other out, but now I feel it's a hindrance to expressing how much I love him and would do for him, if only I could. We see each other about once a month- he lives 700 miles away (1400 miles away when I'm at University). He came to me first, meeting my friends and family. I went to him second, we took a trip to Daytona Beach for the NASCAR Races.

>>How long have you been aware of sexual feelings in your own body? What were your first feelings?

I've been aware of my sexuality since I was a child. My first sexual feelings were of surprise and excitement when my genitals felt really warm. I would have described the sensations like it was as if I needed to pee - but I would never touch myself, like a good Christian girl. Shame and guilt kept me from exploring.

>>When did you first masturbate?

The first time I honestly set out to masturbate, I was 18. Religious guilt and shame held me back from exploring the physical side of my sexuality. Fantasies were my refuge. My imagination sustains me.

>>When did you first have intercourse?

My first time having intercourse was when I was 19. I wanted to throw off my virginity, because I felt it was holding me back from fully giving myself to my boyfriend/Dominant/ Master's desires. And so I did. He didn't really want to, but it happened anyway.

>>Are you bisexual?

I am bisexual but have not been able to explore this side of my sexuality fully, yet.

I never really considered myself bisexual until my boyfriend helped me explore my feelings towards the girl friends I have in my life.

>>How orgasmic are you?

I'm a screamer.

Typically shy and quiet, get me in the sack and I'm a rock star!

My boyfriend was the first one to perform oral sex on me. We were in the woods, in the middle of nowhere, and I was so loud, he said "Am I gonna have to gag you?"



I dropped my head and quietly said yes, so he balled up a cloth from his truck and shoved it in my mouth and went back to making me scream and bite down on that thing.

>>How many times a week do you like to have intercourse?

Since my lover and I are long distance, I don't get any intercourse until we get together. But everyday, twice or three times a day would be ideal.

>>How many times a week do you masturbate?

I masturbate until I cum, three times a week. I play with myself for fun all the time (but don't tell my Daddy that).

>>Are you a squirter?

I can definitely squirt - buckets, sometimes. I never squirted until I was doing orgasm denial with my boyfriend, and when He let me cum, it just came forth like a water spout in my pussy. I was so excited - my first squirting! I didn't really believe in it until it happened to me.

>>How do you feel about anal sex?

I'm an anal slut - I love anal sex. I would go so far to say I prefer it to vaginal intercourse.

>>How do you feel about sex toys? Which ones do you like?

I use sex toys on my own, while I masturbate, and would love to explore using them with my partner. I like your basic sex toys - dildo, butt plug, and vibrators. My favorite sex toy is a vibrator that looks like a lipstick. I just love that I can take it anywhere and people don't give it a second glance. It also has a good kick for just a little thing. It's good for clit stimulation, but I have inserted it before.

>>Do you use condoms?

I use condoms on my toys - makes them easier to clean. I do not use condoms with my partner during sex. It's like trying to wash your feet with socks on.

>>Are you kinky?

I would describe myself as kinky. I like vanilla sex, but how much more I desire my lover taking me in the ass, pressing his body against the marks I have from the kiss of the whip, as my hands are bound and

restrained, a collar binds my neck, and a gag is in my mouth.

>> if so, bottom/top sub/slave/dom/master, switch, or what?

I am a submissive, not willing to drop into the role of slave right now. I am a bottom and would not be able to top someone from the bottom, though I have entertained the idea. Not that it would defeat the purpose of being a bottom - I just don't have it in me to be a top.

>>What does kink entail to you?

Kink is anything that goes beyond normal penis-vaginal intercourse that is sexually enticing. For me that would be spanking, bondage, and other forms of intense sexual play.

>>What's it take to get into your pants?

A level head, a fiery heart, and a heavy hand are what it takes to get into my pants.

>>What do you like in a sex partner?

In a sex partner, I like willingness and openness to new experiences and experimentation.

>>Describe the sexiest person you know.

His eyes can communicate with me - whether he's saying "I love you" or giving me a warning to behave myself. He dresses excellently. He doesn't *try*. *Style* comes naturally to him. He carries himself very well, but he doesn't dominate the room until he opens his mouth, and becomes the life of the party.

>>What do you dislike in a potential partner?

Beating around the bush, or being evasive is something I dislike in a potential partner and in me, for that matter. If you're serious that you want to be with me, show it.

>>What's a deal killer (i.e. things that would make you NEVER willing to have sex with someone?)

If they overstepped their boundaries and took a part of me that I didn't want to give. A kiss I didn't want to have. A touch that hurts when it's supposed to feel good. A photo taken without my permission or consent. You break my trust, you are gone.



>>If you were single, would you consider having sex with ThornDaddy and Dollie Llama?

If I were single I would definitely consider having sex ThornDaddy and Dollie.

I'm a dedicated listener of SAC, and from what I hear, you can't top that kind of sex.

>>How many men have you slept with?

There is only ONE man that I've been comfortable with enough to sleep with, and have him fuck me too.

>>How many women?

I haven't slept with any women. Though the forecast is looking likely to be on the rise.

>>Have you had group sex? Please give details.

No.

>>What's the kinkiest thing you've ever done?

"That I can write about? My boyfriend and I did some BDSM edge play - asphyxiation - an art both dangerous and erotic. In the woods, in the night, in the winter snow, He wrapped his arm around my neck while taking me in the ass, and pulled back against my throat until my airway was almost completely shut off. Through the struggle and tears and begging release, when he did allow my breath return, I came hard and my orgasm was the most intense I had experienced.

>>Describe the best time you've ever had sexually.

With my current Dom. I go downstairs in the early morning to wake up my Love in only a robe. I open the door and see Him fast asleep. Radio plays soft jazzy sounds in the darkness. I step inside and close the door.

I stand by His bed and rub His leg above the blankets, hoping to stir Him so He isn't startled by me. When He doesn't stir, I grow bold. I drop my robe and draw back the covers to step in the bed alongside Him. At this He stirs, and predator - like He begins to catch and devour me with His love - wrapping me tightly in His arms, kissing me deeply and hard. He moves on top of me. We lock eyes and I shake with excitement and fear. I wrap my legs around His. With my hands caress-



ing His back, I pull Him into me. He presses Himself into my pussy.

He knows where I stand, and He knows I'm not ready. I'm still a virgin at this point, and He presses against my hymen. Slowly, He draws Himself in and out - threateningly close to taking what I'm not ready to give. But I know I can trust Him. I know He would never hurt me without me wanting it. We stay entwined for a while longer - it may have been moments, it could have been hours. He left my gift of virginity intact that night, and I am ever grateful for His kindness.

(When I did finally give him my virginity, it was because I decided to throw it off with him. It had become less of a gift, and more of a hindrance to me serving him - I wanted him to have access to every part of me. It was unexpected when it happened - there wasn't as much pain or blood as I expected. But I feel bad because it was not the way he had wanted to receive it, and I was too eager.

(He wanted to make love to me on the beach, in the night, under the stars, only our moans and the waves the only sounds, on Valentine's Day. But I feel the night I gave my virginity to him was more spiritual - in the binding of our spirits and bodies, rather than like the fumbling of some teenagers in a parent's basement.)

>> How important is a man's scent to you?

A man's scent is very important. I love the scent of a man that goes without bathing for a while. I also like the smell of sweat mingled with cologne.

But don't get me wrong - there's nothing wrong with the scent of a man that takes care to be continuously hygienic.

I love the smell and taste of a man's balls and shaft in the morning, especially when I blow my boyfriend before he takes a shower.

>>How are love and sex connected?

Actions speak louder than words. Sex is the physical expression of the heart. Sex says with your body what you cannot express through words but in actions. Sex can exist without love and love without sex, but how much more can you love when you have sex, and have such meaningful sex when you love someone?

>>How are sex and commitment related?

The parallels between sex and commitment can be as long as the penis



is inserted the vagina or beyond the bedroom and in every part of life. You can be fuck buddies or move into becoming husband and wife. I believe you can have sex without commitment, but it's much more intense if you can share feelings with your partner and become committed.

>>If you're kinky, how important is kink to you when choosing a partner?

I require kink in a long-term partner, to satisfy my kink needs, and they are undeniably needs.

>>Would you look outside a happy vanilla relationship to satisfy your kink needs? With or without your partner/s knowledge / approval?

I could not be in a vanilla relationship and I could never look outside of the relationship to satisfy my needs whether they were sexual or kink needs. I couldn't allow someone to do that to me and would never do that to someone.

>>How important are looks?

Looks are important enough for initial attraction.

Hygiene is more important.

A person's mind is more important.

How a person treats you is more important.

Looks are important, but if you don't have anything to back up that great smile, or if it's empty beneath that soft hair, looks don't mean too much.

>>How important is good kissing?

A good kiss is terribly important. A kiss can tell you everything you need to know:

Is he just horny? Is he loving? Does he need a Tic-Tac? Can he take me in hand like I want him to?

>>Describe good kissing?

A good kiss goes beyond the contact of lips. It is the exchange of life, breath, and love.

It involves your entire body: your arms to embrace each other; your hands to explore one another; and your genitals to press against each other, even if you're clothed.

>>How important is penis size?

Penis size is important as I'm afraid of anything larger than 7 inches. Other than that, penis size doesn't matter at all to me.

>>How important is it to you that a man go down on you?

A man going down on me is not as important as me being able to go down on him, but I do enjoy it IMMENSELY when a man goes down on me.

>>Do you go down on guys?

I definitely do go down on guys. I'm a natural born cock-sucker. I don't have the art of cock-sucking totally down yet, but I do have the raw talent and total desire.

>>How important is honesty and respect?

Honesty and respect is everything. Regarding sex, one must be honest about if they are carriers of any diseases and infections. Not just respect, but basic human consideration, is an important element to have in any form of relationship.

>>Are you a feminist?

I'm not a feminist, and am not able to take on a feminist perspective.

>>Is it possible to be submissive to a man and still be a feminist?

It is definitely possible to be submissive to a man and still be a feminist.

I'm submissive to one man and will stand up against all others.

>>What do you think of "SUBMISSION AND COFFEE",
BDSM podcast from a happily married couple
<http://www.askdollie.com>?

"SUBMISSION AND COFFEE" is a wonderful show that covers all areas that I enjoy. It is real life, real sex, real submission, real domination, real art, and real love. They talk about things that are smart, helpful, relevant, and interesting. The podcast covers a wide variety of areas. There is something for everyone in SAC - whether it's the music, the sex, the smart-people talk, or the D/s and kink.

>>What advice do you have for men trying to meet women to fuck?

Online is great resource for meeting people - you have detailed profiles



and usually interest checklists to see if you are compatible.

I've been to raucous parties and bars before and have a guy just come up to me and start slapping my ass while I'm dancing. Not your conventional handshake greeting, but I liked it and we recognize each other now.

But whatever method you use to meet people, you need to be honest about what you're looking for, first with yourself, and then with others. If you just want a fuck buddy, be up front about it and look for others who are too.

Don't pretend to want to have a relationship just to fuck a woman - that's sick, disrespectful, and completely unnecessary. There are lots of women out there, and some think about sex more often than men. You just might find a bigger pervert than yourself.

>>What advice do you have for men to fuck women better?

Harder, deeper, faster *for longer*. Make her feel every solid, inch of you, and don't stop until you know each and every part of each other. Look at her long and intensely in the eyes. Make her experience every emotion you feel for her. Explore each other with your fingers, mouths, eyes, genitals, anything. Do not leave any part of each other unexplored.

>>What advice do you have for men trying to hold on to women?

Be open and honest when it comes to your own fears and desires. Communication is an obvious suggestion, but it truly is the key to a relationship.

But you have to talk about yourself in the sense of your experiences and how you feel about them, not just your favorite color or pizza toppings.

>-----<

INTERVIEW 4:

Name: Sienna S

(Sienna S is another devout listener of Submission and Coffee. She wrote us a fan letter, we've chatted a bit, and we like her a

lot. -ThornDaddy)

>>Tell us a little bit about yourself please.

Name: Sienna S

Age: 37

Location: Australia

Hobbies: Skiing, eating good food and drinking great wine

Schooling: University Degree in Health Science

Relationship status: Married

>>How long have you been aware of sexual feelings in your own body?
What were your first feelings?

I remember being about three years old and noticing the older son of our next-door neighbor and thinking "I can't stop looking at you, I want to hug and kiss you."

>>When did you first masturbate?

After my parents gave me a book called *Where Do I Come From?* I must have been 12. After reading the section on masturbation thought..."Wow OK, so it says that my body will feel like it just did a sneeze, but tingle all over...that sounds like fun!" As soon as the sun went down I was off to bed to begin exploring and finding out what this whole "orgasm" thing was about.

>>When did you first have intercourse?

18 years of age

>>Are you bisexual?

No, but I like kissing girls!

>>How orgasmic are you?

Masturbation - every time

Sex - rarely

Dream state - very

>>How many times a week do you like to have intercourse?

I get sex about once every six months (not due to my lack of trying, I might add). I would like to have sex every day.



>>How many times a week do you masturbate?

At least four.

>>Are you a squirter?

Not that I am aware.

>>How do you feel about anal sex?

I have tried on a number of occasions to have anal sex, it just hurts too much....

Fingers or a toy...No problem...penis...ouch!

>>How do you feel about sex toys? Which ones do you like?

I have a whole drawer full of toys....I don't like toys that are that Made-in-China toxic plastic junk. The ones coming out of Germany and the UK at the moment are pretty good. There is also a great company in New Zealand that make a really good range of pure silicon non-vibrating ones. They have a great weight to them and feel really life-like.

A good hand held back massager also does the trick. I picked up a back massager from Chinatown years ago that is so strong you could drill through a wall with it...it's strong enough to be able to stimulate me to orgasm through a pair of jeans.

>>Do you use condoms?

Not anymore.

>>Are you kinky?

Very.

>> If so, bottom/tom sub/slave/dom/master, switch, or what?

Switch – but after listening to Submission and Coffee, I think that I may be more of a sub.

>>What does kink entail for you?

Pushing boundaries, exploring those dark places, a good mind fuck, anything with rope...

>>What's it take to get into your pants?

A quiet confidence, knowing what to say and when to say it...

I was sitting in my lounge room after a first date years ago, I was just about to put some music on and asked my date what he would like to listen to. He replied, "We're going to have sex." I nearly had an orgasm on the spot.

>>What do you like in a sex partner?

Someone who takes the time to read what my body is doing and respond to it. Not just a mechanical set of actions. That is, go down on you for three minutes, then regardless of what is happening come up and stick their cock into you...

Someone who has an imagination and can be spontaneous enough to reach for something and use it.

>>Describe the sexiest person you know.

Again it's all about their quiet confidence. Not overly good looking but knows that if he had you in a room to himself – you would be his.

>>What do you dislike in a potential partner?

Arrogance, bad aftershave, bad breath, hairy hands, rudeness.

>>What's a deal killer (i.e. things that would make you NEVER willing to have sex with someone?)

Someone who acted sleazy, or told me how good it would be with them. Stupid pick-up lines..."So do you sleep on your stomach? Oh. Really...well, can I?"

>>If you are (or were) single, would you consider having sex with ThornDaddy and Dollie Llama?

No.

>>How many men have you slept with?

Around 30.

>>How many women?

Kissed five, fucked none



>>Have you had group sex? Please give details.

Hmmm, we didn't have sex but were all fondling and kissing, etc. So no penetration.

>>What's the kinkiest thing you've ever done?

Hands bound kneeling on a chair, (knees on the seat, but facing the back of the chair), gagged, blindfolded, dildo in my ass, cock in my pussy.

>>Describe the best time you've ever had sexually.

See above.

>>How are love and sex connected?

I have never been a one-night stander, all the people I have slept with I have had some sort of relationship with. Not necessarily saying I was in love with them, but there was definitely affection there. As I get older however, the need to have the element in the sexual act seems to be diminishing.

>>How are sex and commitment related?

When you were younger, it was all about "If I have sex with you then I am totally committed to you, I have shared my body with you blah blah." A part of me wishes that when I was younger I had more confidence and was able to go out and explore more without thinking I had to be in a relationship. I guess society played a big part in that with respect to what was considered the norm and not wanting to be considered "easy" and frowned upon by my peers.

>>How important is kink to you when choosing a partner? Do you require kink in a long-term partner?

I was attracted to my husband because he was being flogged by an ex-housemate and his then-girlfriend. I found it very attractive. I had never seen anyone being flogged before and thought it was the most thrilling thing I had ever seen.

>>Would you look outside a happy vanilla relationship to satisfy your kink needs? With or without your partner/s knowledge / approval?

I used to go onto Second Life and live out the fantasy life I would like to lead in RL as a sub. I enjoyed being in this environment as it stimu-



lated me mentally. Physically however this is where it failed and I ended up feeling more frustrated than before I started. As for doing it in real life - I think my Catholic upbringing would stop me from doing anything about it. In a perfect world however, if I could get away with it I would.

>>How important are looks?

Beauty is in the eye of the beholder I feel. If you have a connection with someone, if the energy between you is there, looks mean nothing.

>>How important is good kissing?

Very very important. It tells so much about a person.

>>Describe good kissing?

A relaxed mouth that melts into you. Makes you suck a little breath in because you have to stop yourself from falling. Nibbles and bites, sucking on the bottom lip a little, a carefully placed tongue. Kissing that extends to an extended side of a neck, turns into bites and verges on a little bit of pain. Mmmmm

>>How important is penis size?

"It's not the size it's what you do with it" – BUT too small and it can be a problem. Too large is also a problem. I went out with a guy that was MASSIVE, it was ridiculous, he couldn't even get a condom on. Every time we had sex, it was a marathon just to get it inserted.

>>How important is it to you that a man go down on you?

I can take it or leave it. I like the sensation but have never been stimulated to orgasm from it.

>>Do you go down on guys?

Yes. I love it. I love love love giving head. Love the sensation, the smell, the taste. There is so much to do down there, balls, asshole, cock... so many different textures and sensations on your lips!

>>How important is honesty and respect?

I believe it is very important. If you can't be honest with someone you are disrespecting yourself as much as you are them.



>>Are you a feminist?

I believe that men and women are equal. But from a kink point of view, when ThornDaddy calls Dollie his "Dirty little cum whore, only made for the pleasure of men" It's a turn on....

>>Is it possible to be submissive to a man and still be a feminist?

Dollie is the perfect example of that!

>>What do you think of "SUBMISSION AND COFFEE",
BDSM podcast from a happily married couple <http://www.askdollie.com>
?

I have learned so much from Submission and Coffee, from how to feel comfortable making noises in bed to accepting that anal sex is OK. The quality of the recording is excellent, the conversations in real time of day-to-day activities (i.e. going on a picnic, getting a haircut, etc.) is fantastic. I especially love when there is a transition from "normal" activities like picnic to full blown orgy-styled sex and back again. I think it really encourages people who only have sex in the confines of the bedroom and are too scared to try anything in a different environment to get out there and explore!

>>How important is a man's scent?

Well they say that a man's scent is the first thing that attracts a woman. I believe that, I can walk through a crowd and smell a man....I prefer a natural scent to aftershave. I had a boyfriend who left his T-shirt at my place....I wore it to bed until I couldn't smell him any longer. It was fantastic.

>>What advice do you have for men trying to meet women to fuck?

Be honest – what is the point of trying to get in bed with a woman that you don't have a natural connection with? You can "play the game" and "trick" a woman into bed, but it will be bad for her and it will be bad for you. The more honest you are about your needs and wants right from the beginning, the stronger the natural connection will be and this in turn can only result in a fantastic love making / sex session.

>>What advice do you have for men to fuck women better?

Don't be afraid to experiment. Ask questions. Communication is vital, ask her what she likes and tell her what you like. Read books, listen to podcasts like Submission and Coffee and educate yourself about the various aspects of sex. Find out what you like, if you don't know then

explore and find out!

>>What advice do you have for men trying to hold on to women?

Let her know she is needed and wanted. Every now and then tell her she is beautiful. A woman loves to hear that you find her sexy and attractive. It makes her feel good and she will be more confident in herself because of it.

>-----<

INTERVIEW 5:

Name: Jennifer Neko

(Jennifer and I used to have sex, before I met Dollie. We're still good friends. She comes over for dinner sometimes, and house sits and takes care of our kitties when we're out of town. In fact, Jennifer was the only guest when Dollie and I got married. She was the witness as well as the photographer. -ThornDaddy)

>>Tell us a little bit about yourself please.

I'm in my mid-20s, go to university. I have a long-term relationship with a man my age, and I think we look like a contradiction when together. I collect comic books, know near nothing about science fiction, and I really like to eat good offal. All signs have signaled that we're doing really well for a polyamorous couple. We love each other very much, and seem to grow together. The most pensive time we've had so far was when my poop flooded the toilet and I had to clean it all up at 2 AM with eight rolls of paper kitchen towels. He was not very happy then.

>>How long have you been aware of sexual feelings in your own body? What were your first feelings?

My first sexual feelings were at 13 when I found the hidden folder of porn from a friend's zip disk. He apparently didn't know I knew how to unhide folders on a Mac. There were a lot of graphic pictures that made me really aroused.

>>When did you first masturbate?



Thirteen years old. I didn't know how to masturbate and so I just kept touching and trying new things 'til I was able to cum for the first time.

>>When did you first have intercourse?

At nineteen, in a dorm room with an Economics major I'd just met that afternoon.

>>Are you bisexual?

Biologically, I have no obvious sensation when looking at women I could be attracted to. However, I choose to be with women on an occasional basis, for fun or friendship-enhancing revelry.

>>How orgasmic are you?

Not very, I need to actively concentrate on my own sensations to maintain arousal, and I frequently am distracted by self-conscious worries.

>>How many times a week do you like to have intercourse?

4-5 times a week.

>>How many times a week do you masturbate?

As of late, it ranges from two times a week to every two weeks.

>>Are you a squirter?

Yes, I can squirt.

>>How do you feel about anal sex?

I liked it in the beginning, but I can't really do it anymore because I have hemorrhoids. I like being rimmed, and I have not found many who like to do it.

>>How do you feel about sex toys? Which ones do you like?

When alone, I like to have a vibrator or dildo of medium thickness inside me while I hold a vibrator to my clit. Sometimes I cum best when I do this on my knees.

>>Do you use condoms?

I use condoms only when I'm doubtful my contraceptive pills are work-

ing, or when I'm with someone other than my boyfriend.

>>Are you kinky?

Rough sex and light bondage are constants, but I am not overtly kinky.

>> If so, bottom/tom sub/slave/dom/master, switch, or what?

Mostly sub.

>>What does kink entail for you?

It entails sex that I want to have which I can't tell my friends about because they are too vanilla to understand before judging me harshly. I like group sex, rough play, and restraints, but I don't think these are extreme kink.

>>What's it take to get into your pants?

Compliment me and make me your center of attention. Flirt and let me know you want me.

>>What do you like in a sex partner?

Open mindedness to try new things, and be able to talk about them too. He must also know how to touch slowly and knowingly, responding to my body in different ways when I am further and further aroused.

>>Describe the sexiest person you know.

My boyfriend is. And I won't describe what he looks like. He's very wise, witty, honest, has integrity, and is kind.

>>What do you dislike in a potential partner?

If he's cruel and manipulates people. If he broods, and is not communicative, if he lies, and if he is not honest.

>>What's a deal killer (i.e. things that would make you NEVER willing to have sex with someone?)

Absolutely disgusting "soul", meaning if he has ever humiliated others, hurt animals, hurt people intentionally, and has no empathy.

>>If you are (or were) single, would you consider having sex with ThornDaddy and Dollie Llama?



Yes, that would be nice.

>>How many men have you slept with?

20 (+/-) men over seven years.

>>How many women?

I've slept with four women.

>>Have you had group sex? Please give details.

Three times. The first was at a sex party I happened to walk into. Two women and their men invited me to join, and I was eager to etch me some new experiences. It was the first time I'd ever had a man behind me and another in my mouth. I enjoyed this very much and still fantasize about it.

The second was at a later date, hosted by the same people. I'd come with a friend, hoping he'd be able to charm another woman to join us. We weren't very successful, but had found a group wanting to play with us all the same. Then my wallet got stolen that night; we searched the whole apartment for it, but it wasn't found.

The third time came years later. I was invited over to play with a friend of mine from school, and his new partner, who at 35, had her first sexual experience with him only a few weeks prior. We first cuddled, then he and I gently started taking off her clothing to massage and loosen her tenseness. His lips took care of her face, while I licked along her lower parts, eventually reaching her mons and clit. It was wise that she could look at him while I licked her, as I could sense she was not going to be very eager for lesbian sex. The rest of the night focused on easing her into sharing two bodies at once, and trying to relax her.

When I left that morning, my friend said that his partner had cried afterwards, saying she felt very lonely and insane. We both grew concerned, and she wrote an email to us soon after, explaining what she was thinking of that night and why she felt so conflicted. It makes me feel sad that her first group experience was not as nice as we'd hoped for her, but it seems she'd been rushed into a lot of new things in a short period of time. The valuable years of knowing when to make love, and when to be carnal were still a vague sameness to her. She just needs time to work out whether she can really have casual sex, or stick to romantic relationships.

>>What's the kinkiest thing you've ever done?

I'm not sure, there are several, and none strike me as very kinky, but perhaps another may find them pant wetting. Being hogtied and fucked 'til my boyfriend came in me, then photographed in that position with cum dripping out of my pussy.

>>Describe the best time you've ever had sexually.

It was with another lover, a friend who wanted to see if he could have "friends with benefits" and not end up attached emotionally. We both were of the same veracity, and were hungry for long, rough, almost desperate fucking. He could look at me in very wanting eyes, and touch me in movements that said the same, I felt so wonderful. His excitement came from holding me very tightly, whispering things he'd like to do to me. I would tease 'til he did them.

>>How are love and sex connected?

Much of the time they are mentally referred to as a pair-bonded combination. I can have the best sex I've ever had with someone I did not love, and yet love the person I possess, but still feel sexually unsatisfied. My serendipity: that I could be in love with a person who matched my own appetite for the recipe of my sexual tastes.

>>How are sex and commitment related?

You endanger the health and well being of your partner if you'd rather hope he/she doesn't find out about your side game. A partner deserves full honesty, and entrusts you with not coming home to mingle infected mucus membranes together without knowing who you were with last. If you want to be polyamorous, then take time to lay out boundaries and agreements for what will hopefully be a nice time, so the person at home doesn't have to worry so much.

>>How important is kink to you when choosing a partner? Do you require kink in a long-term partner?

I need my partner to be open minded to try new things, or be able to talk about them with me without flinching in disgust. I have tastes many people would find no reason for understanding, and so I won't be with them, but the person I am with will.

>>Would you look outside a happy vanilla relationship to satisfy your kink needs? With or without your partner/s knowledge / approval?

No, not without my partner's knowledge and approval. If it were agreed



to, then I would seek other people to satisfy me.

>>How important are looks?

A degree or two less important than character. I still will want to stare at my man everywhere he walks, but that is also in part because I know of what an amazing person he is. My eyes are lured by his compassion, intelligence, and quirkiness, and I stare at these things as I look at his beauty as well.

>>How important is good kissing?

It is not good when one is kissing a jackhammer. That's too loud.

>>Describe good kissing?

Like gospel singing, it is call and response. A hard-press echoed with even harder presses, nibbles talking to nibbles, or withdrawing teasingly from a tongue that wants to hold onto you. Not slobbering without knowing whether the other person likes slobbering.

>>How important is penis size?

Length is not so important as girth is. Being poked in the cervix when I'm not ready is very painful, but having a filling sensation provokes more of my desire.

>>How important is it to you that a man go down on you?

I would rather he go down on me if it turned him on to do so. His arousal makes it all the better for me, as mine is not independently triggered. I enjoy when a man is good with his tongue, but only if he's comfortable and eager to have me.

>>Do you go down on guys?

Almost all the time. I really love to do it, especially when I masturbate.

>>How important is honesty and respect?

Honesty and respect are *the* two elements. Everything else springs from that.

>>Are you a feminist?

Yes, indeed.



>>Is it possible to be submissive to a man and still be a feminist?

Yes, her private life has no bearing on the inalienable rights of all women, nor does it even remotely touch it. That she chooses to be submissive, and not forced to be, is a feminist exercise.

>>What do you think of "SUBMISSION AND COFFEE",
BDSM podcast from a happily married couple <http://www.askdollie.com>
?

I like Dollie's voice, and the content is fun and varied, but because I know them the way I do, it still feels like I'm listening in to my parents having sex (and I've never done that before).

>> How important is a man's scent to you?

There's a scientific folk tale out there about how body odors are supposed to signal the degree of relatedness with the person you meet. If there's something strange about his scent, then he must be a cousin. I don't really believe that, but I do know I wouldn't be as comfortable around someone who had a body odor I didn't like. I like smelling my boyfriend after he comes home sweaty from jogging, it doesn't bother me at all. I like him after a bath too, because he smells like shampoo. Even if a man has just washed and is clean, I would still notice his distinctness when it's time to get close no matter what he does. It matters enough to consider for a moment whether I want to date that person anyway.

>>What advice do you have for men trying to meet women to fuck?

Be completely open about what you want to have and do, not only to filter out those unwilling, but to also have agreement. Trust is an aphrodisiac because it takes away one more item of apprehension from the moment. Apprehension is like a sympathetic response that says "Run away!", but at whisper level, and sympathetic responses restrict blood flow and body functions to do just that. To trust a lover is entering safe territory.

>>What advice do you have for men to fuck women better?

Take time to arouse her and make her feel good. Care about what she's experiencing, perhaps love her if you can. Throw some toys in for fun. Many sex toys are weird looking, but then laughing is one more thing that makes sex better.

>>What advice do you have for men trying to hold on to women?



Don't blame her for something she didn't do. Talk to her in your most honest self and let her see your faults, so she can be nearer to you. Let her show her faults too, her plain, undignified awkwardness whose translation reads like a description of her life.

(ThornDaddy's note: the bold on **Don't blame her for something she didn't do** is mine. I believe it's the most important lesson there is for dealing well with humans. "**Don't blame people for things that aren't their fault.**")

>-----<

INTERVIEW 6:

Name: Amy-Rose

(Amy-Rose is a fan of the podcast, and did the wonderful drawing that's on the cover of this book, and used at the top of every page. She's an amazing person. She's also a virgin, and very pretty. That's a rare bird these days. And I loved interviewing her, the fact that a virgin can consider herself kinky helps reinforce my theory that kink is more innate than learned.

-ThornDaddy)

>>Tell us a little bit about yourself please.

My name is Amy-Rose, I am 20 years old, and live in Canada. I will be going into my 3rd year of university studying design next year. At the moment, I am consumed with painting a pair of old Converse All-Stars – that sums up my short-term hobbies. I love reading fantasy and psychological thrillers, and I love adding my own commentary when I watch movies. I like to play piano, write, dance, paint, camp, and I hope to one day learn to play the cello. I'm single, and shy, but love to laugh and joke. I've never been in a long-term relationship and I am a virgin.

>>How long have you been aware of sexual feelings in your own body? What were your first feelings?

I'm assuming I was a later bloomer compared to most – I've heard of people having their first orgasm at 6 years old – I was 13 when I



became sexually aware, but feelings probably started at 11 or 12, when I was first exposed to porn via pirated pay-per-view. It was unlike anything I had ever seen before, and I was fascinated. It made me tingle in *special places*.

>>When did you first masturbate?

When I was 13. I had found out that masturbation wasn't exclusively male, as I had assumed (I had never heard of a single instance of female masturbation before this, so I assumed it didn't exist – that it was physically *impossible* even). The first time I tried, I didn't climax, but I thought I had, and thought, "So what's the big deal? It's not *that* good." The second time I did however, and remember thinking, "That's *a lot* better!"

>> ~~When did you first have intercourse?~~

>>How come you're still the prettiest 20-year-old virgin in the world?

Good question. As far as I've experienced, guys don't seem to be attracted to me in the least. I don't have any close guy friends (to introduce me to *their* guy friends!). I've always been a little shy with strangers, and I (apparently) have a hard time recognizing flirting – oh, and I can *never* make the first move (call it submissiveness, call it chickenshit, whatever). I don't hang out at bars or clubs like normal college students (I just don't see the thrill), so being in a setting to meet guys is rather limited.

>>Are you bisexual?

Not really. I find it's fun when I'm in public sometimes to allow guys to think a girlfriend and I are lovers – I like to play it up just to tease them, to make their heads turn, but other than that, I don't have any sexual attraction to women.

>>How orgasmic are you?

On a scale of 1 to 10, compared to Dollie, who I'd say is a 10, being *very* orgasmic, I'm probably a 7. It usually takes at least 5 minutes for me to climax, and afterward I can very rarely come again in less than 15 minutes. Although, I do have trembling, wave-like, eyes-roll-back-in-my-head orgasms, so that makes up for it maybe.

>>How many times a week do you like to have intercourse?

Well I never have, but if I did, probably every day. But I'd rather wait and have sex with someone I love than devalue sex by being frivolous.



>>How many times a week do you masturbate?

Around 7, give or take. Once a day. I've trained my body to go to sleep after masturbating, so unless I'm REALLY tired, or just extra horny, just the one time a day.

>>Are you a squirter?

I wish – I think it would be SO hot if I could squirt on command. I hope someday I can learn how. I think squirting is sexy because, like male ejaculation, it affirms that a person isn't faking it.

>>How do you feel about anal sex?

It makes me squirmy and uncomfortable. I know there are multiple ways to make it safe and clean to avoid infection and injury, but still, there's a piece of me that says, "exit only."

>>How do you feel about sex toys?

I don't own any sex toys – mainly because I can't afford them. If I ever win the lottery (and get my forty acres and a llama!), I'd probably get one of those 18k gold Lelo vibrators just for the novelty.

>>Do you use condoms?

I would use condoms until I got married, even if I were on birth control.

>>Are you kinky?

Yes, although I don't know how far it runs because I've never explored it with another person. I want to try bondage, spanking, whipping, role playing, probably more, and I am a naturally submissive person who would enjoy a man dominating me.

>> If so, bottom/top sub/slave/dom/master, switch, or what?

I'm a sub, but could possibly be a switch.

>>What does kink entail to you?

I think almost anything outside of straight-out intercourse could be considered kinky. For instance, even oral sex could be a fetish, or light spanking. There are different degrees of kink – light to heavy, with dif-

ferent degrees of risk and intricacy. I think it's a very broad area of sexuality that's being increasingly explored by more people.

>>What's it take to get into your pants?

1) Honesty 2) A vet checkup 3) some form of contraception 4) A declaration of long term commitment.

>>What do you want in a sex partner?

Someone who can communicate what they want and who wants me to communicate what I want. Someone willing to explore. Someone who wants to pleasure me while getting pleasure from me.

>>Describe the sexiest person you know.

My best friend. She's not afraid to show off what she's got and won't apologize for it. She's not afraid to show her obvious love of built, sweaty men, and love (or loathe) for the people around her.

>>What do you dislike in a potential partner?

Bad teeth, someone too conservative/liberal, someone more than 15 years older than me, someone who doesn't give me the opportunity to express my opinion or someone who doesn't respect my opinion.

>>What's a deal killer?

1)The possibility of contracting a major/terminal STD, 2) If the other person is already in a relationship, 3) Getting pregnant.

>>If you are (or were) single, would you consider having sex with ThornDaddy and Dollie Llama?

No, I could not stand being a beta sub. I NEED a monogamous relationship – at least for now.

>>How many men have you slept with?

None! In any capacity.

>>How many women?

None, and not planning to.

>>Have you had group sex? Please give details.



I have not.

>>What's the kinkiest thing you've ever done?

Nothing comes to mind.

>>Describe the best time you've ever had sexually.

Probably the week or so I was writing my first erotic fiction story that was actually a fantasy I've had for a while. I had to work out the details on paper, and by working them out, it seemed more real or plausible. Plus, I was thinking about it a lot and that was a turn-on.

>>How are love and sex connected?

I think they aren't necessarily connected, but in my opinion, should be. For me at least, being at the height of intimacy with someone I trust is more appealing than random sex.

>>How are sex and commitment related?

I think most of the time, committing to sex and communication with a particular partner over time will just make sex more enjoyable, because you start to know what turns your partner on and vice versa, resulting in more satisfying sex.

>>If you're kinky, how important is kink to you when choosing a partner? Do you require kink in a long-term partner?

I think to keep things interesting, *some* kind of kink would eventually have to be incorporated into sex for the relationship to last. At least a willingness to explore is needed.

>>Would you look outside a happy vanilla relationship to satisfy your kink needs? With or without your partner/s knowledge / approval?

I would never go behind my partner's back. If I am in a happy relationship, even a vanilla one, I imagine that I would be communicating my desires to my man automatically, so I would be discussing my needs with my partner and working out a solution or compromise.

>>How important are looks?

I won't deny they are, but they're not everything. If you don't find someone attractive physically, I imagine it would be more difficult to have a sexual relationship. I find that the more I get to know a guy as

a friend, the more attractive he becomes (as long as we have things in common!).

>>How important is good kissing?

Not sure. I suppose if it's bad, you could just improve with time to the preference of your partner.

>>Describe good kissing?

Good breath, clean teeth, no excess saliva.

>>How important is penis size?

I don't know – I hear different things. I suppose if a penis is too big to fit in a vagina, it doesn't matter what *size* it is, it is simply too big. Or vice versa. It depends on the physical compatibility of two individuals, and their preferences.

>>How important is it to you that a man go down on you?

I'd say moderately important. I think by doing it, it shows me he loves and accepts my vagina, enough to put his lips to it. I know it's not every woman's turn on, but I'd like it occasionally.

>>Do you go down on guys?

I wish! I have an oral fixation. I don't believe I could orgasm just by giving head (with no direct stimulation), nevertheless...to give someone the pleasure my mouth can offer is very satisfying, even as a fantasy.

>>How important is honesty and respect?

Very, I'd say vital. Without open honesty, a relationship can't reach its full potential. Without respect for each other, I imagine the relationship wasn't that great to begin with.

>>Are you a feminist?

Maybe, I think *equalist* would be a better word though. I think men and women should have equal opportunity, voice, and respect.

>>Is it possible to be submissive to a man and still be a feminist?

Yes. Submissiveness is a *choice*, it shouldn't be a response to fear – that is abusive. We submissives choose to give up our choice – if we



are told to do something, we do it because we *want* to, and we always have to right to refuse.

>>What do you think of "SUBMISSION AND COFFEE",
BDSM podcast from a happily married couple
<http://www.askdollie.com>?

I love it! It's a big nail in the coffin of BDSM stigma. I love how it's unscripted, uncensored and totally honest. My favorite moments are listening to the cats purr with happiness, listening to Daddy and Dollie being sweet and saying "love you!" to each other, and of course, the sex! I think it is absolutely remarkable that Dollie can cum by giving head. Jealous!

>>How important is a man's scent to you?

Everyone has a different smell, and I probably will like my man's scent (once I get him). But for now, I enjoy right-out-of-the-shower clean; that faint smell of soap mixed with the natural smell of clean skin.

>>What advice do you have for men trying to meet women to fuck?

Don't act overconfident – you just come off looking like an asshole. Be polite, honest, subtly confident, non-threatening – try to make her feel comfortable with you, bring out the good parts of your personality. It doesn't hurt to have a shower and throw on some clean clothes either.

>>What advice do you have for men to fuck women better?

If they haven't told you what they want yet, *ask* them. If they say something like, "as my partner, you should intuitively know what I want!", that's bullshit. It is possible to know what someone wants *sometimes*, but not all the time. Deep down, they know that no one is a mind reader, but they want to believe that what they're saying is true because they want the security of knowing they've found their soul mate/true love. Women don't want to waste their time and youth and uterus on someone who's not compatible with them.

Communication is what keeps a relationship strong and since you're not telepathic she has to vocalize her thoughts and feelings and desires so you can better please her. Be willing to explore with her, even if what she proposes sounds a little strange (but if it's risky, know the risks beforehand). During sex, be aware of her facial expressions and body movements that should give you some clues to what you're doing right/wrong. Of course, this is just my take on it all – what do I know?

>>What advice do you have for men trying to hold on to women?

1) Don't let them get bored. When people get bored, they either get depressed or start looking for excitement. Constantly be on the look out for things to do together and share together, and ask her what she wants to do. But keep in mind that every relationship has ups and downs. It can't be exciting as hell all the time – that would be exhausting.

2) Women aren't mind readers either. Sometimes we don't know what you're annoyed or angry at, so you have to say something. If you don't, nothing gets fixed. Even if it has nothing to do with her, she could offer a different perspective on the situation and help you with it. Likewise, if she does something you like, tell her you like it. We like to be complimented and know our work is appreciated, then we're more likely to do it again.

3) Try not to forget important dates, i.e. birthdays. It may be unintentional, you may have a terrible memory regardless of circumstance, but girls often see this as men not caring enough to remember. Write it down, set alarms, whatever.

4) A lasting relationship is an exchange. When someone gives, gives, gives and gets nothing in return, it's almost like a breach of contract.

5) Everyone needs their personal space and time, and each person is different. Some need more, some need less. Don't be distant, and don't be suffocating.

>-----<

INTERVIEW 7:

Name: Mistress Velvet

(Mistress Velvet is yet another fan of Submission and Coffee who wrote us a fan letter and we e-mailed back and forth. We totally dig her. -ThornDaddy)

>>Tell us a little bit about yourself please.

I'm Mistress Velvet, I'm 24 years old. My hobbies consist of taking care of my little zoo (2 cats, 1 parakeet, 1 dove, 1 rat, fish, 8 chickens, and a red tail boa constrictor), Web design, and writing. I have a degree in computer networking but I am a full time housewife. I have been married for just over a year. I will dig more into my relationships when I



get to other questions!

>>How long have you been aware of sexual feelings in your own body? What were your first feelings?

I started to discover my feelings when I was about 6 or 7, I was riding a little bouncy horse, the kind that is suspended by springs and realized that it felt good! I didn't understand completely why it felt good but it only took me a few months and late night TV to figure out it had to be something to do with sex.

>>When did you first masturbate?

I started experimenting with different things after discovering pressure on my crotch felt good and by about 8 years old I had figured out how to bring myself to my first orgasm by holding a pillow tight between my legs and kinda riding back and forth against it. Then after a couple of months I figured out that a hula hoop felt better, looking back on it now it makes sense that something more rigid placed more direct pressure, I didn't understand it at the time.

>>When did you first have intercourse?

I have two answers for this question:

The first time I actually had sex I was 11... From the time I was 10 until I was 13 I was molested by my much older step brother... At age 11 it progressed from molestation to rape. I was living with my dad and my step-mom and didn't tell them for years so the abuse continued until I kinda snapped one day when I was 13 and called my mother and told her I needed to move back in with her right away. Needless to say it was a horrible experience but it has made me stronger.

Now the first time I had consensual sex was a different story! After moving back in with my mother I rebelled really hard. I was almost 14, it was about 4 months after I moved out of my father's house. I had been dating this guy for a few months when we finally decided we were ready. He was a virgin so it wasn't great! Lasted about a whole 45 seconds. Luckily for me, he had made me cum twice already with his fingers so I was satisfied! I can remember it crystal clear, there is a lot of sex I've had that I cannot remember so clearly, this time was a major rush from knowing I had some control over the situation.

>>Are you bisexual?

Yes I am bisexual, I personally actually prefer women for a serious relationship even though at the moment I am involved with two men

and no women. That's the way the cookie crumbles, I suppose. My first love was a woman and I think that has made me a bit biased!

I actually believe that all people are bisexual. Humans clearly have sex for fun. If you believe in evolution, they have proven humans evolved to have sex for pleasure, and with multiple partners. It only makes sense to me that pleasure can come from either sex. In times before Christianity, many cultures encouraged sexual fun, with both sexes. I believe now we have so many straight people as a result of generations of imposed morals which go against homosexuality.

>>How orgasmic are you?

Well, I have never really had a problem having an orgasm. I tend to always have multiples. I usually have no problems having orgasms back to back with a minute to two between. There have been a few occasions I have had about 6 or 7 just kinda blend into one, with about 10 or 15 seconds in between. That was lots of fun! :) I can orgasm from little things too, like having my hair pulled. I also can orgasm on command while in sub-space. If a Dom/me orders me to cum it usually takes about 15 seconds for me to orgasm, even without sexual stimulation!

>>How many times a week do you like to have intercourse?

Hmm as much as possible! I am usually satisfied with about 3 times a day, which tends to end up with me having about 6 or 7 orgasms each time. Depending on the partner sometimes once is enough, others 5 or 6 times are needed. With my current partners, about 3 is usually enough to leave me happy enough that I don't feel the need to masturbate later!

>>How many times a week do you masturbate?

That depends on how much sex I am having! Assuming I am having no sex at least 2 or 3 times a day. If I am having regular sex I still masturbate every morning in the shower and usually right before falling asleep unless I have sex right before falling asleep. The last time my husband was out of town and I was completely alone with no sexual contact at all for a few days I masturbated 6 or 7 times a day!

>>Are you a squirter?

Yes I am! I typically have 3 or 4 "little" orgasms first. These are the "normal" orgasms that most women have, then I will squirt. A lot of women need a lot of G-spot stimulation to achieve squirting, I do not.



It just naturally happens with my 4th or 5th orgasm back to back in a short time span. Not all partners are able to bring me to this place, but I tend to weed out the ones that aren't, or train them to do so!

>>How do you feel about anal sex?

I enjoy anal sex immensely! I do have to have a lot of trust with my partner to have anal sex with them. I greatly fear long-term physical damage so typically anal sex with me is the final stage to get to. I prevent physical damage to my ass by warming up with butt plugs of progressively larger sizes...Slowly moving up to the size of the man I am going to be sleeping with.

There are very few people I trust enough to fuck me in the ass. Which I makes it even more enjoyable for me. It is a very passionate act on the rare occasion that it happens.

>>How do you feel about sex toys? Which ones do you like?

I absolutely love toys! I have never really found a toy I didn't like! I feel that everyone's sex life can benefit from toys! Even "tame" toys for vanilla couples, they can add such excitement! Even for me, I have such a collection that I rotate through them. When my husband grabs a toy we haven't used in a while it's such a rush! I have and use everything from "tame" little bullets to a TENS Unit.

>>Do you use condoms?

I do not use condoms with my husband. I am not able to have children so there is no need for birth control between us. I do use them with anyone else I play with for STD protection. I won't use them with a steady partner who I know is clean and not having sex with anyone else, or is using condoms every time with his other partners.

>>Are you kinky?

Of course I am! I have really been kinky since before I started actually having consensual sex! My mind just is wired that way. I started experimenting with handcuffs and rope play with my serious partner as a teenager. She also thought as I did, and we both started discovering together. We were both switch and kinky before we knew the words to explain what we were doing! Just came as natural as breathing to us...

>> If so, bottom/top sub/slave/dom/master, switch, or what?

I am switch, I prefer to be Domme with women as I am typically sub



with men. Although lately I have been breaking down that wall, thanks to my newest toy. (And by "toy" in this sense, I don't mean a "vibrating sex device", I meant another partner! I call my fuck buddies "toys.") My new toy is also switch but has been helping to push me to be Domme with him. This has helped me to also be Domme with my husband so lately I have been switch all around, and I don't think that is going to change.

I used to have an extremely hard time being aggressive, even with men, let alone Domme with them. This was due to the sexual abuse I endured. So for many years I was always sub with men, and switch with women. In the past few months I have broken down that wall, and lately have been like a kid in a candy store enjoying this new rush of being able to dominate a man!

>>What does kink entail for you?

To me kink is anything the "normal" people won't do. I am really open and will try anything at least twice. Most people of course aren't this way. When I meet new people who are kinky and they ask me what I am into I typically respond with, "How about the list of my hard limits instead, as it is much shorter.." I heard you and Dollie talking about your hard limits on "Submission and Coffee", all like 4 or 5 of them. I am the same way!

>>What's it take to get into your pants?

For men, I want someone who sees me as more than just a sex toy. Prove to me that you see *all* of me, and that we can sit and talk for hours about whatever random stuff comes to mind, and I will gladly fuck you silly! I enjoy sex greatly but I am secure with who I am. I need a man to appreciate me completely. It seems so simple, yet so many men struggle to look me in the eye when we talk. They are more focused on my 40F bra size. If a man can see the *whole* package; mind, body, and soul, he will usually be lucky enough to enjoy the whole package!

>>What do you like in a sex partner?

I like someone who is open minded. I think that is the most important thing to me! I don't really need someone who is as kinky as me, so long as they are willing to push their limits! I feel that life is too short to be wasted doing the "usual" in or out of the bedroom. Someone who is willing to try new things and communicate what the things they like and dislike are is typically lots of fun for me!



>>Describe the sexiest person you know.

The sexiest person I have ever known was my first girlfriend Alysin. She had a way about her that reminded me of a geisha! She was extremely intelligent and could hold her own in any conversation, but she moved with a grace I have yet to find again. Everything she did was beautiful. She was the kind of girl that was still hot when she had flu and felt absolutely horrible. Just watching her doing anything, even just sitting and reading a book, made me wet and took my breath away all at the same time.

>>What do you dislike in a potential partner?

I don't like men who only want sex. There is nothing wrong with having fuck buddies but too many men focus on the fucking part and not at all on the buddy part. Other than that I don't like people who are close minded. Oh and I can't let myself like someone who is allergic to cats, THEY MUST LIKE CATS! :)

>>What's a deal killer (i.e. things that would make you NEVER willing to have sex with someone?)

I can't stand people who are really not open minded. Even in ways that don't affect me, like so many men who are homophobic when it comes to men but love to see two girls go at it! I can't even bring myself to be attracted to men like that....I will not be involved with anyone who is into sex with animals or children. That is liable to bring out violence in a non-sexual way in me. Other than that, the only other thing is lying. I am a brutally honest person and I cannot stand being lied to.

>>If you are (or were) single, would you consider having sex with ThornDaddy and Dollie Llama?

Nice one to slip in there! :P Yes I definitely would, but I know I am too young for you guys! Enough said, I think! :)

>>How many men have you slept with?

Oh, I hate counting but I will...23 I believe. I could be missing a drunk one night stand or two. That is all of my consensual partners, anyway.

>>How many women?

More counting OK, 12... Now a lot of those were long-term relationships where there was a man or two or three. I haven't had a monogamous relationship since I was 16. And even that relationship he let me play with girls, and I did, just no other men. That is really the closest

to monogamy I have ever had. I know it's not going to work so I just don't even bother to try! :)

>>Have you had group sex? Please give details.

I have had quite a few threesomes but never a larger group. The first one I was 16, the most recent I was 22. So you want details, then I will tell you about my most fun threesome! I was 20 and the guy I was dating wanted to watch me get fucked by another guy, so we found a guy who was interested. I slept with this second guy a few times so he could get used to me and be comfortable enough for the threesome.

The night of the threesome wasn't planned, we were just hanging out on my trampoline talking for a while. Then the guys apparently decided tonight was a good night while I went inside for a minute.

I came back out and got up on the trampoline, my boyfriend threw me down and started making out with me. Then my toy came over and started kissing me while my boyfriend proceeded to take off my shirt and bra and start playing with my breasts. My boyfriend unzipped my pants and took them off while my toy started playing with my breasts. This continued on until I was getting fucked by my boyfriend while sucking my toy's cock. Then my toy fucked me while my boyfriend just sat back, watching and masturbating. They kept taking turns fucking me until I was on the verge of passing out. We *all* ended up passing out, naked on the trampoline!

>>What's the kinkiest thing you've ever done?

Well, that's a tough one to answer... There was one time at a dungeon I used to frequent. Typically when I went to this dungeon I used to just sit back and watch, socialize with people but never really engage sexually. At the time I was 19 and not nearly as secure with myself as I am now. I am a big girl and couldn't see myself trying to show off with all these skinny little things running around. One night though I was feeling adventurous enough to let my Dom flog me. He tied me to a Saint Andrews Cross in just my bra and panties, then he undid my bra and flogged me from my shoulders to my ankles. There were a lot of people watching but I couldn't see them since I was facing the wall. I just heard them talking, it could have been 5 people, it could have been 25, I'll never know. All I knew was having that many people looking at me while getting flogged, I just orgasmed over and over. By the time he was done I was pretty bruised from head to toe and literally had cum dripping down both legs to the ground where there were small puddles at my feet. Everyone, from what I heard, thoroughly enjoyed the show. And I thoroughly enjoyed knowing they were watching.



I consider that to be the kinkiest thing I've done, as it was me going so far out of my comfort zone while enjoying every second of it! I was so scared at first that I wanted to cry. But given the chance I would do it again!

>>Describe the best time you've ever had sexually.

I think the best time I have ever had was the time that I just mentioned in the last answer! :)

>>How are love and sex connected?

I think that they are not connected, but if you love someone it makes sex more enjoyable. Sex is simply physical pleasure. But if you love someone then that passion comes through in the sex and makes it a deeper, more enjoyable experience.

>>How are sex and commitment related?

Once again, I feel they are not connected. But if you are committed to someone it is because you care about them or love them. And that emotion will come through during sex and make it more enjoyable for both parties.

>>How important is kink to you when choosing a partner? Do you require kink in a long-term partner?

I am kinky to the point where I need a kinky partner for a long-term relationship. They don't need to be as kinky as me. I never have monogamous relationships so I don't need one partner to fulfill all of my needs. But I do need some amount of kink, even if it's just small things. Plain old vanilla sex bores me to tears.

>>Would you look outside a happy vanilla relationship to satisfy your kink needs? With or without your partner/s knowledge / approval?

No, and that is why I only have open relationships with kinky people. If I tried to have a "normal" vanilla monogamous relationship I surely would go crazy and need to leave the relationship before I ended up cheating. An open relationship with a vanilla person might work but I would really have to love them because the sex wouldn't be all that enjoyable for me. If they were perfect in every other way I would, but I would definitely need a toy or two to satisfy my needs.

To clarify: That paragraph was meant to be hypothetical as I haven't dated anyone "vanilla" since I was 16! :) I am in an open relationship

now, but neither partner is vanilla by any means.

>>How important are looks?

Looks really don't matter all that much to me. Of course, everyone likes having someone nice to look at. But for me I have always found that people who are beautiful inside end up being beautiful outside to me once I really get to know them. My husband is a good example of that. He isn't bad looking but not my type at all physically. We were good friends for almost a year before dating, and over that year he became more and more attractive to me as I got to see the real him.

>>How important is good kissing?

Good kissing isn't all that important to me if the partner makes up for it in other ways. It is also important that they don't think they are amazing when in fact they aren't and insist on making out all of the time. Many people don't really know and accept their strengths and weaknesses.

>>Describe good kissing.

I think the best kissers focus entirely on you. They keep their eyes closed and simply focus on you. Not overthinking it but still thinking about what they are doing. I like one hand in my hair pulling ever so slightly, not so hard it causes pain, just a gentle tug. The other hand around the small of my back embracing me, holding me close to them.

>>How important is penis size?

Penis size really don't matter to me as long as guys who aren't blessed know it and try to make up for it. I dated a guy once who knew he was small, and also knew he couldn't last very long. So he made it for it by becoming extremely good at performing oral and would make me orgasm so many times before we actually got to intercourse I just wanted him to hurry up and get it over with before I passed out! It's all a balance thing, and the best partners knows their strengths and weaknesses.

>>How important is it to you that a man go down on you?

Well, that all depends, based on my last answer in some cases it is very important. There are other partners with whom I really didn't need it at all. It really depends on the partner and how well they perform in other areas. There are men who don't enjoy performing oral. And that's OK, so long as I am satisfied with what they can and will do.



>>Do you go down on guys?

Well, yes and no. I really prefer not to go down on men. That is relating to the sexual abuse I have already mentioned. It is a trigger for me. BUT that being said, I do have moments once in a while where I enjoy it. I have only gone down on men that I trusted and loved. It's one of those once in a blue moon things where I get so deep into sub-space that I only care about their needs to the extent that I want to go down on them. I'm not entirely sure why but when I'm at this place I enjoy it.

>>How important is honesty and respect?

They are extremely important to me. Lying is a complete deal breaker for me. I absolutely don't tolerate lying in any way shape or form. Not even little white lies because they tend to snowball into bigger lies. Respect is also very important, I feel that everyone should be treated with respect until they give you a reason to not respect them. If I'm not treated with respect, that is also a deal breaker.

>>Are you a feminist?

Absolutely not! I am the exception to my generation! I was raised by my grandmother who is the very definition of a 1950s trophy wife. She raised me to believe that a woman's place is in the home. I get funny looks from guys when they joke around about a woman's place being barefoot, pregnant, and in the kitchen; and I just smile and agree! I don't believe women should work, now if a single woman wants to work that is entirely up to her. But I feel that "working moms" are a huge part of the problems we have in society nowadays. Children aren't being raised properly and therefore aren't becoming productive members of society. Oh I'm going to rant on this topic so I will end this topic by saying that I am more chauvinist than more men I know!

>>Is it possible to be submissive to a man and still be a feminist?

I can't really answer that question as I am not a feminist, but I would imagine that it is possible, just can't speak from experience on this one!

>>What do you think of "SUBMISSION AND COFFEE",
BDSM podcast from a happily married couple <http://www.askdollie.com>
?

I absolutely love the podcast! I am a regular listener and totally love what you guys are doing! I know a lot of the world doesn't understand

it. But I do and I will continue to support you guys so long as you are still at it!

>>What advice do you have for men trying to meet women to fuck?

Well, if you just want a fuck, that's easy. Go to the bar and find drunk-ish girls looking for a one-night stand. There are plenty at any bar you go to, especially around closing time. Just be yourself and be honest. If I go to the bar planning on getting laid and a guy I find attractive is honest and tells me he's looking for the same, I will usually fuck him.

Don't try to pretend you want a relationship to go after the girls that are looking for one! Just be honest and up front and you will get much further than by playing games!

>>What advice do you have for men to fuck women better?

Be open to new ideas, and to criticism! I know every guy wants to think he is AMAZING in bed. But if you get honest feedback and you actually put your ego aside long enough to listen to her, you will become better. Rinse and repeat this and someday you will be amazing! Everyone is so different sexually that you need to have brutally honest conversations with your partner about sexual tastes and preferences. These conversations do no good if you aren't truly listening and taking that advice!

>>How important is a man's scent to you?

It really doesn't matter all that much to me. I tend to not notice either way. I do notice the smell of certain colognes if they're too strong for me. I don't like that. But other than that, I usually don't notice. So for me, it's not important at all.

>>What advice do you have for men trying to hold on to women?

Be honest and open with her about everything. Don't lie. Also, of course, don't tell all your deepest, darkest secrets on the first date. But as she opens up to you, you need to do the same.

Great communication leads to great trust which leads to great sex. That is the formula for a great relationship, as far as I'm concerned. If you follow that it, won't be very hard to have a great long-lasting relationship.



Appendix 2

Interview with ThornDaddy and Dollie Llama

Dollie and I do a lot of interviews. This is a very old one we did that never came out, as far as I know. But it's a good one, so I'll print it here. It was for a magazine that catered to fans of pro wrestling. Don't know why they wanted to talk to us, but they did.

Dollie Llama is a smart, kinky, submissive woman who wrote the popular book
Diary of an S&M Romance
<http://www.smdiary.com>

She and her master, ThornDaddy, also do a free weekly podcast about the bondage life. It's called "Submission and Coffee"
www.askdollie.com
(no iPod needed!)

Joseph: How did you and ThornDaddy meet?

Dollie: We met through a kink website, Bondage.com. Exchanged a few e-mails, then telephone calls, and shortly thereafter met in person. Once we met, it was all over. He was, and is, exactly who I was hoping to find.

ThornDaddy: Bondage.com used to be the coolest kink community website in the world, but was recently bought out by Alt.com...a site we don't much like. We're waiting to see if Bondage.com goes down hill and starts to look and feel like Alt.com...though it doesn't really matter much to us. We were only on there to find each other, and we did.

Joseph: How did you get into this lifestyle?

Dollie: In many ways, my submissive tendencies are just a natural part of me, inherent in my personality. When I love someone, I want to nurture them, care for them, do for them. I'm much more comfortable serving than being served. And I also love excitement, adrenaline, endorphins, and I find that pain, mixed with pleasure, is the best rush ever.

I was exposed to kink pretty early in life, at 18, but didn't really under-



stand it or feel a need to participate. Yet it didn't turn me off either; I've always been very sexual, and guilt-free and open minded in my attitude about sex.

I married young, and not wisely, choosing a man who was not terribly dominant. As our other problems grew and drove us apart, his lack of assertiveness and dominance became increasingly irritating to me. I even recall one vicious argument during which I slapped him and told him to "BE A MAN!" Yet in all fairness, I didn't yet really understand true dominance, or know how to ask him to be the man I needed him to be. (I'm not sure I even knew what "the man I needed" was at that point in my life. But I did know it wasn't him.)

After that marriage ended, I spent a long time living in my own head, learning about me. I didn't date, and was celibate. I worked. I raised my two children (now young adults and out of the nest).

Finally I was ready to re-enter society, and, typically for me, I did it with a bang. I dated. Lots. I experimented with swinging. I engaged in sex for sex's sake. Finally I got involved with a man who one night brought out a deerskin flogger and asked if he could whip me. I agreed. I loved it. I never looked back.

After that, I KNEW what I wanted. I entered into kink with wide-eyed wonder, and the dedication of a scholar. There was a lot to choose from, and a lot to learn.

Joseph: What is the difference between S&M and BDSM?

ThornDaddy: In a very general way, they can be used interchangeably. S&M is the "SM" in "BDSM."

Dollie: S&M stands for sadism and masochism. BDSM is commonly interpreted as "bondage, discipline, sadism and masochism", although sometimes as "bondage, discipline, dominance, submission, sadism, masochism."

The literal translation is really not as important as recognizing that the acronyms are shorthand for alternative, or kinky, sexual behaviors. As with anything sexual, there are no set parameters; it's up to the participating individual to pick and choose what aspects suit them and their partner(s). The continuum is so wide and varied, saying BDSM means only one thing would be like walking into a fully stocked bar and saying the only thing to drink is a martini.



As I said, BDSM stands for many things. Not everyone into kink is into all aspects of it. Pain, whether a desire to administer or experience it, is not universal. Neither is a need to serve or be served. Even sex, in any form, is not necessarily a component of kink. And as Daddy says, there are plenty of girls who like to be pushed around in bed, spanked, slapped, bitten and bruised, but if you told them to get you a glass of water when it's over they'd tell you to go get it yourself. (Or even tell you, "Go fuck yourself!")

Perhaps the best generalized description of kink would be "power exchange." It's up to the people involved to define the nature of that exchange - strictly sexual, strictly service; pain, no pain; full-time or part-time; humiliation and degradation or neither. A person doesn't even have to consistently choose one side or the other - many folks "switch", exerting dominance sometimes, offering submission at others.

Kink is a giant smorgasbord, and you only need take what you like.

Joseph: Why this lifestyle?

Dollie: Because it suits me, makes me feel at peace and fulfilled, and kinky sex is simply better, in my opinion. Being Daddy's slave answers a need deep in my being, and I believe my submission and service answer a complementary need in His. And my brain just seems to be wired to find pleasure in pain, too. It's who I am.

ThornDaddy: It comes natural for me to lead, to be in charge. And I like whippin' on ladies, and telling them how to dress for me. (Also, I love blowjobs and love to get them from my woman, on command, 100% of the time, without question.)

Joseph: Why write a book and have a podcast about BDSM, and why do you choose to have "live sex" on the podcast sometimes?

ThornDaddy and Dollie: Because we enjoy it!

We do the podcast for something to do, it entertains us. And hell, everyone needs a hobby. We record ourselves having sex because we're unashamed exhibitionists.

Also, a lot of people write us and tell us they like it. We have about 1300 regular listeners, and we've actually made some friends through the cast.

Sometimes we have sex on the podcast, sometimes we talk about the



BDSM life, sometimes we talk (hopefully in an entertaining way) about our cats, or shopping, or punk rock, or our jobs. This is partially because we don't want to be tied into just talking about sex (that would get boring, and this is the problem we have with most sex podcasts - they're only about sex). Also we like to show that we are normal people who just happen to have "non-normal" private habits. We like to debunk common misconceptions that non-kinky people sometimes have about kinky people.

We did the book because we feel there's a lot of misinformation out there about BDSM. Like in movies and on TV: the kinky person always turns out to be the serial killer. That's just not based on truth. Sure, there have been a few high-profile cases where psycho people have been into bondage, but it's not true BDSM when you're abducting, raping and killing. True BDSM is always "Safe, sane and consensual", and that's the only way we do it. We have an intensely loving relationship that also incorporates pain, domination, submission, and consensual slavery. Dollie is ThornDaddy's slave, in the bedroom as well as in the kitchen, in life, in every way. We're pretty normal in many ways. We're average Americans. We're workers, homeowners, taxpayers, (we file jointly - we're legally married), and we have two cats. We've never killed anyone. We've never kidnapped anyone, not even in play.

BDSM is not a mental illness, and five to ten percent of the world is into some form of it. (Source: Kinsey Institute, 1990.) BDSM is not uncommon, but it's very misunderstood. We want to help overcome some of the misconceptions, and there's a long way to go.

S&M was medically classified as a symptom of mental illness until very recently. The American Psychiatric Association stopped defining consensual S&M as a indicative of mental illness in the year 2000. (They stopped defining homosexuality as a disease in 1973.)

Dollie: Not everyone into S&M is a scary person with a leather hood in a dank dungeon, or a broken victim with no self-esteem. And not everyone into it revolves their life around it. We do have a 24/7 relationship, Master & slave full time, but you wouldn't know it to see us on the street or visit our home. We're a goofy middle-aged suburban couple who act like a couple of kids most of the time. We go on dates to the movies, we take walks in the woods holding hands, we cuddle a lot, etc. But I'm available on call, 100% of the time, for sexual or household service for Daddy, and Daddy can whip my ass any time he feels like it, but we don't really make a public show of it.

ThornDaddy: More on misunderstandings of BDSM: Pop culture often adopts the trappings of BDSM, without understanding it, and often gets



it wrong. VERY wrong. For instance, a lot of dominant, masculine men (especially wrestlers, punk rockers and heavy metal singers) wear collars. This came directly from S&M culture (from gay biker S&M culture, if you want to be specific), and was adopted by people outside the culture, as fashion.

Dollie: Yeah! In BDSM, wearing a collar means you're someone's bitch. It means you're the submissive, the one on your knees. It often even means you are the owned property of someone (a collar can be almost like a wedding ring in kink culture).

I'm sure those macho dudes wear collars because they think it makes them look like an angry dog, but it doesn't.

ThornDaddy: I wonder how many wrestlers and metal singers would keep wearing collars if they knew that to 10% of the world, wearing a collar absolutely means "I am someone's bitch, and I do my master's bidding when told to, without questioning it."

So yeah, we wrote the book "Diary of an S&M Romance" because we feel there's a lot of misinformation and we wanted to interject some truth into a public discussion that is sorely lacking in truth.

Joseph: How long did it take you to write the book?

ThornDaddy: About a year. It started as homework assignments I gave to Dollie. I only ever dated artists, and Dollie was not an artist, but she had the makings of one. So I mentored her and made her into an artist, to better fit my plans and needs, and to give us something to do. Dollie's name is on the book as author, but it was a collaborative effort. I'm a professional writer, that's what I do for a living, and I have a lot of experience editing.

She and I have distinct minds and personalities, but sometimes write together (for example: some parts of this interview). With many things, we pretty much think as one, share one brain. She is my submissive, but in a way, on a basic cellular humanistic level, I consider her my equal.

Joseph: Can the change to the S&M lifestyle be made overnight?

ThornDaddy and Dollie: Well, we are of the theory that people are either born with a propensity towards BDSM, or they're not. You can't make someone into it if they're not, and you can't "cure" someone who is. A lot of people probably have tendencies toward it, but don't know

it, and might even be offended by the idea, because that's what they're taught.

ThornDaddy: Basically, if a woman likes being spanked in bed, once she's turned on, she's probably wired for BDSM. How far she wants to take it is up to her. The bottom/slave/sub really does have the most true power in a safe, sane consensual BDSM relationship...she (or he) negotiates things ahead of time with the top/master/dom/mistress/domme, and determines the level it goes to, then lets the top do the hell out of it. Often there is a safeword, a word that means "stop", and it has to be honored, ALL THE TIME, by the top.

(I must add that wife beating has nothing to do with BDSM, and I HATE wife beaters. But from the outside, what we do might look like wife beating to someone who doesn't understand it. But the difference is, my wife ASKS me to whip her, and she loves it. And I never do anything that would require medical attention, and I would stop if she told me it was going too far.)

But yeah, if someone's really wired for kink, the beginnings of the change can be made overnight. The first time I was with a kinky girl, it changed me on the spot. I'd had years of sexual experience already, and was really good at it, even had a reputation as a "fucker of women" (I was in a popular band at the time, and fucked a LOT of women back then). But the first time a girl said "Slap me!" as I was fucking her, and she TOTALLY dug it and came when I did, it altered my world, instantly and permanently.

Not everyone's into everything. People have boundaries, different likes and dislikes and sometimes the boundaries change and evolve with time. But they should be discussed BEFORE the play begins, and the top MUST respect the bottom's limits.

Joseph: Does it start and stop in the bedroom?

Dollie: Again, it's different for different people...for some, yes. For us, no. I am always Daddy's slave, at home or away, in bed and out. About the only time I'm not strictly under His control, at His service, is when I'm at work, and that's just a matter of practicality rather than desire. We don't have a need to shove our lifestyle in the world's face, I don't kneel for Him outside the house, we don't dress in black leather and purple capes. (I do, however, always wear a collar at home, and sometimes when we go out.)

But I do as He says, try my best to anticipate and exceed all His needs,



and defer to Him in all things. This doesn't mean I don't have opinions, independence, or a brain of my own, it just means I only offer these things when it suits Him. And, since Daddy is a wonderful, kind and loving Master, He values my contributions, and utilizes them.

Joseph: Where can people buy the book?

Dollie: Everywhere. Amazon,
<http://www.amazon.com/gp/product/0970539258/>

Barnes & Nobel,
<http://search.barnesandnoble.com/booksearch/isbnInquiry.asp?z=y&EAN=9780970539250&itm=1>

JT's Stockroom, <http://www.amazon.com/gp/product/0970539258/>
(The Stockroom is also a great place to buy bondage gear and toys.)

even WalMart,
http://www.walmart.com/catalog/product.do?product_id=5170927

There's also a free excerpt of the book at <http://www.smdiary.com>

Joseph: What do you have to say to all the "Haters" out there?

ThornDaddy and Dollie: Do you mean people who dismiss us because we're kinky? And people who think that bondage is sick and anyone into it is deranged? (Or even kinky people who think THEIR kink is the only way and our way is somehow "wrong"?)

Well, in some ways, it's more what we DON'T say. For the book, the podcast and things like this interview, we use our Internet pseudonyms, "Dollie Llama" and "ThornDaddy", rather than our real names. Our families and friends know what we do, but we like to keep our kink life on a need-to-know basis. Using pseudonyms helps insulate ourselves from the weenies. ("Weenies" is our personal name for "haters.")

When approached by someone who wants to argue, or worse, harm us (yes, we've actually been threatened by strangers for being kinky and outspoken about it), because they feel that what we do is "wrong", we do the Zen thing...the martial arts thing: We step out of their way and let them use their own weight and power against themselves, to quickly get them out of our way.

ThornDaddy: We are into educating, and living as loving examples of a healthy BDSM lifestyle. So we really have no interest in arguing with

people. One thing I have learned about dominance is this: You cannot dominate the entire world. I used to want to do that when I was younger, now I'm learning that true dominance is all about only engaging in dominant relationships with people who are interested in playing in that way...whether it's in sex, business or intellect.

I was a varsity wrestler in high school, and I was good. But I was an angry guy, and tried to take that type of attitude outside the mat, and ended up getting my ass kicked in the street. I could have ended up in jail for fighting if I'd kept it up. Nowadays I only engage in any type of dominance with people who want to play that way, in a positive way. When I'm in a situation where someone wants to "fuck with me" for my beliefs or leanings, I sidestep them entirely. People like that want a fight, and if you don't give them one, they move on to someone who will.

I structure my life in a way as to avoid as much of that as possible. I work at home. I'm my own boss, and love it. I work 80 hours a week, at things I enjoy. I don't go out on Saturday nights. I avoid drunk people and mean people. And when some weenie sends me an e-mail telling me I'm fucked up because I'm into BDSM, I delete the e-mail without replying. Engaging people who send e-mails like that only puts me into a ring where no one can really "win."

The most effective way for me to change the world to what I believe is best, in anything, is through education and example. You can't argue ANYONE into ANYTHING.

Joseph: Thanks for taking the time to chat with the readers and share so much personal information.

ThornDaddy and Dollie: Thanks for the interview, Joseph, and thanks for listening. We had fun.

Interview copyright 2007 PEEP! Press. All rights, including reprint, reserved.



Appendix 3

Poly Dollie

Essay on Finding Joy in Polyamory
by Dollie Llama

So yeah...I'm lovin' life these days, feeling pretty damn contented, and I supposed I want to crow about it a bit here.

You see, I've finally found my peace and joy in poly, and it's simply blowing my mind.

It hasn't been easy for me. And consequently, it hasn't been as easy for Daddy as I would wish it to be. I've spent many hours staring into the darkness, ashamed and distraught, praying I could be at ease, could will away my insecurities, and do as I promised Daddy from the very start. At times it's torn at both our hearts and serenity - not the kind of thing I, as a slave, want to bring to the table.

So many factors have created challenges for me: fears, habitual viewpoints, even the deep and abiding love and adoration I have for Daddy have contributed to my dilemma. I feared I wasn't worthy, I feared I was no longer young and attractive, I feared I would be replaced. I even feared my fears. Little irritating voices kept poking into my head, telling me that poly wasn't the way it was "meant to be." I feared Daddy's disappointment and growing aggravation with my issues. I feared I'd lose Daddy because I couldn't get past my fear of losing him.



And losing Daddy would be like losing the air I breathe and the water I drink.

Those of you who know a bit of my history know I've been an informal part of a poly group, before I met Daddy. Not as the alpha sub, but as a treasured addition. I never felt I posed a challenge to the primary; it was never my intention, I knew my place coming in, and never wanted it to be more, or less, than it was.

Before that, I was a couple's play toy, and loved it. We were chummy, happy, and had great sex. I was very fond of both people, but never felt my heart was more than casually, yet contentedly, involved.

Why then, did I have such absurd issues and fears when poly came up and I was Daddy's beloved primary? Some of it, I know, is because, now, leaving would come at too high a cost. Previously, as an addition to someone else's relationship, I could come and go as I pleased. I wasn't looking for love, and so had no worries whether or not love was returned.

From the inception of my life with Daddy, I had known, and openly, freely agreed, that other women would be brought in to play with us. Daddy told me he wasn't looking to create a triad, wasn't looking for love in addition to mine, but that he needed to have more than one woman in his bed now and then. Daddy told me I was special, I was his love, and I had nothing to fear, except losing Daddy.

I trust Daddy so completely in all other aspects of life, why did I struggle so with this?

It wasn't Daddy I didn't trust. It was me, and it was the other women. I love Daddy so intensely, I had trouble believing that anyone else would be less susceptible to his many charms, and so would seek to grab him all for themselves. Combined with my life-long insecurities about my own value and desirability, this toxic mix was killing me. And my resulting melpiness and worry was making Daddy miserable and cranky.

Some of this was aggravated by the round robin of play girls who came through our bed. I'd get past the worry, and get into the excitement, of sex with a new person. Daddy would flirt, I'd get in on the flirting a bit, and be psyched to go, and then BAM! She'd show up, we'd start, and all I could see were the things that had attracted Daddy (and me) to her to begin with, see Daddy enjoying himself, and all the fear and



worry would rush back in. Would this be the woman who had no respect for our love, would try to insinuate herself into his heart, push me aside? Was she prettier, sexier, smarter, more creative than I? Who WAS this female creature in our bed? It made me crazy!

To be absolutely clear and fair: Daddy did NOTHING to add to my fears. In front of the play girls, he sweetly expressed his love for me, was up front about their place as a play toy, told me I was beautiful to him, and his soul mate. He was honest with me, and caring.

Another thing: good play girls are hard to find, and even harder to keep. Of all the women we've played with, all but three have visited once, and once only. And since they've not returned, it's guessing on my part as to why they didn't. Some of it might be the depth and breadth of Daddy's and my love for each other (friends say we give them cavities). It might be that some of the women were just a little bit broken, and didn't want any kind of involvement with anyone, and just wanted to get fucked. Maybe we weren't all they were hoping for when they signed up. Some were very into Daddy, but just tolerated me (and so really fed my fears). Another was very into me, but was lukewarm about Daddy (and that isn't going to float Daddy's boat for long - he needs, and deserves, to be the center of attention). Who knows? But, since I never got to know them well, develop any sense of them as individuals, my trust never grew as it needed to for it all to work out.

And some of them, once I met them, I just didn't *like*. You know, those people that make the little hairs on the back of your neck stand up and make you want to scratch at them like an angry kitty.

And truly, I really LIKE sex with girls, love the dirty sweetness of it, and WANTED to be Daddy's good girl about all of it. But I just couldn't find the combination that would allow me to be that good girl.

Enter the pet. (Yay.)

the pet came into our lives not as a play girl, but as a fan of the podcast who lived close enough to the Nest to be willing and able to come over to do some housebotting when I was expected to be laid up after surgery. In my view, this, in and of itself, shows she's a big-hearted girl, and an all-around good person. Altruism is rare and precious, and a simply wonderful quality in a submissive, I think. the pet joining us in our bed grew organically and naturally from our first interaction. I had less initial trepidation with her than I did with any other playdoll...even when I was a bit broken physically, and not able to be at my very best.

And I REALLY like her. She's the kind of woman I would be drawn to in

friendship, which is a very rare thing indeed. Before Daddy, I tended toward friendships with men, and the few girlfriends I do have are very special people, the pet more so than any. the pet and I hang out and talk girl talk when she's here and Daddy's busy, and I cherish our times to giggle, chat and bond.

Daddy likes her too, a lot. This was a bit hard for me at first, it made the old fears and insecurities rise, but the saner, more reasonable side of my brain managed to hold sway and point out, repeatedly, all the good things (so many!) about her.

But the final turning point, what pushed me into the comfort, happiness and just plain overwhelming enthusiasm I wanted so desperately, came because we have now been together as a group enough times that I feel I know her, I trust her, and trust that she has only good intentions concerning us. This is MY hurdle, my issue that had to resolve. the pet has NEVER done anything to make me feel uncomfortable, or threatened. Neither has Daddy. We've talked about our relationship, Daddy and I, pet and I, and all three of us together, and I feel safe and secure in how everyone feels, and what everyone wants.

Let me add here that I know, logically, that life comes with no guarantees. That what we have today could very well not be here tomorrow. But I also know that living in fear of what might not last will rot any goodness there might be. In anything.

I want our happy little group to go on and on. Daddy is my life and soul, and I adore playing and cuddling and hanging out with the pet. I know Daddy is happier with me at peace, and I'm happier with him happy AND me at peace. Last report, the pet was pretty content with the situation too.

the pet once commented to Daddy and I that "Most little girls' princess dreams of living happily ever after someday don't involve three people." As Daddy once sang "There is no promise of a future in the moment", but we're taking things one day at a time, and the pet still seems very elated to come back each time. And we don't just fuck. We watch movies with her, chat, go for walks, go on dates, and more, all mixed in with more sex in a weekend than most people probably have in half a year.

I'm not sure what it all means, neither is the pet or Daddy, but we're all comfortable and happy. And this is the first time Daddy and I have shared our bed with another woman that I'm not only not just putting up with, but actually looking forward to pet each visit.



If I have a point I suppose it's this: trust is key, communication breeds trust, and none of it comes overnight. I put my trust in Daddy and in the process, and it worked.

And thank you, pet. You're a godsend and a sweetie. Mew you!

Thank you, Daddy. You are my shining light and my shining knight, and I can only thrive and bloom under your firm and tender care.

Once again, I am grateful, and humbled, to be such a lucky bitch.







APPENDIX 4

Kink and Sex Educational Resources and Sites

So...this book you've just finished is but one man's vision. If you're interested in this journey of BDSM love, you should probably learn as much as possible, to help you craft your own unique view and practice. Here's a few places to start.

Kink, D/s, BDSM, etc., can cover a huge amount of ground, and is different for everyone. If you're new to this stuff, or even just curious, we recommend you learn as much as you can.

In addition to our own podcast, "SUBMISSION AND COFFEE", <http://www.AskDollie.com> and our blog, <http://www.ThornDaddy.com> we recommend (and were helped ourselves) by the following resources for safe, sane, and healthy BDSM practices between consenting adults.

WEB RESOURCES:

Wikipedia article on BDSM (great place to start)

<http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/BDSM>

(That page also has a link to the "Spoken Wikipedia" recording we did of Dollie reading the article.)

Acid Test For Doms (written for subs, but has great info for anyone for safer dating)

http://www.askdollie.com/acid_test.htm

BDSM U (Covers basic concepts, education and terms. Is on Bondage.com, but you don't have to join to read. Dollie and ThornDaddy met on Bondage.com, a long time ago, but the site has gone way downhill since Penthouse bought it out, and we don't recommend becoming a member.)

<http://bondage.com/CatID/47/ID/133/faq/article.html>

Sex Is Fun podcast. Not BDSM-specific, but damn good stuff. And they like us! <http://www.greatsexgames.com/podcast/>

And just for fun, <http://www.StuffOnMySlave.com> , a site I run. Send in pix of stuff on your slave!

FRIENDLY FREE KINKY WEB COMMUNITIES WE LIKE:

MyDungeonSpace.com (community and forum)

<http://mydungeonspace.com/>

Triskelion Society (community and forum) <http://triskelionsociety.com/>

CollarMe.com <http://www.collarme.com/>

LISTS OF LOCAL BDSM ORGANIZATIONS

USA <http://www.darkheart.com/usalist.html>

Canada <http://tinyurl.com/6hs2rw>

Europe http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/List_of_BDSM_organizations

TOYS:

The Stockroom <http://www.stockroom.com/>

Extreme Restraints <http://www.extremerestraints.com/>

LovePotions.com (lube) <http://www.lovepotions.com/>

(And don't forget the endless possibilities to be found at your local home improvement center or pet/equestrian supplier!)

BOOKS WE LIKE:

SM 101 <http://www.amazon.com/101-Realistic-Introduction-Jay-Wiseman/dp/0963976389/>

The Loving Dominant <http://www.amazon.com/New-Improved-Loving-Dominant/dp/1890159727/>

The Ethical Slut <http://www.amazon.com/Ethical-Slut-Infinite-Sexual-Possibilities/dp/1890159018>

And of course, Dollie's book,

Diary of an S&M Romance <http://www.amazon.com/gp/product/0970539258/>

Future Shock by Alvin Toffler

Not about kink at all, but this 1970 manifesto predicts and confirms everything I complain about in chapters 12 and 13 of the book you're holding. Get a copy of *Future Shock* used on Amazon for 12 cents plus shipping:

<http://www.amazon.com/Future-Shock-Alvin-Toffler/dp/0553277375>

FILMS

Most films with a kink motif suck. We recommend, instead, *They Live*. This 1988 sci-fi dark comedy doesn't have any kink, but predicts and confirms everything I complain about in chapters 12 and 13 of the book you're holding. Get a copy of *They Live* used on Amazon for 7 bucks plus shipping:

<http://www.amazon.com/They-Live-Roddy-Piper/dp/B0000AOX0F>



"Squittens in the Internet"
photos by Dollie Llama.

L to R: Fuzzbucket McFluffernutter, Charlie Squitten Jr,
Peanut McFluffernutter





"Oh blessed pod, deliver unto thee...."

(This book's Quark and TIFF files on the ThornDaddy Foundation's favorite sacred USB drive, about to go to the printer and begin its journey to becoming an endless sanctified worldwide grove of mighty oaks.)

My tattoo says "Spared."

It's a reference to getting off drugs, and how every day past age 30 for me is all cream....How the fact that I'm still alive is an unexpected gift.



**Listen and be a fly on our wall!
a kitty in the corner of our room!**

**NEED A PURPOSE IN LIFE? WANT TO HELP
WITH OUR WORLD-CHANGING CAUSE?**



You don't need to wear a white robe and camp outside our doorstep just to join our little world. (Though that might work, if you're female and submissive. Let us know if you have an interest in this.)

But what we really need is many more smart folks who can do assorted computer tasks, ranging from proofreading to audio editing to sharing archived zips of our casts on BitTorrent; to propagating, mirroring, promoting and archiving our media, forever; to being one of our part-time on-tap slave girls.

If you want to get involved, and you possess general and/or specialized talents that we

can utilize in our plans for world domination spreading the love, you may petition ThornDaddy via e-mail from the blog:

www.thorndaddy.com



Also check out our free kinky culty cat comedy Podiobook, *The Plump Buffet*"

<http://www.podiobooks.com/title/the-plump-buffet/>

(Also a paperback book on Amazon.)





Still Life with Second Amendment Protecting the First Amendment. Photo by ThornDaddy



MEW!